UNIVERSITY OF PITTSBURGH

Darlington Memorial Library

A

CONCISE NATURAL HISTORY OF EAST AND WEST-FLORIDA.

CONTAINING,

An Account of the NATURAL PRODUCE of all the Southern Part of British America, in the Three Kingdoms of Nature, particularly the Animal and Vegetable.

LIKEWISE,

The Artificial Produce now raised, or possible to be raised, and Manufactured there, with some Commercial and Political Observations in that Part of the World; and a Chorographical Account of the same.

By CAPTAIN

BERNARD ROMANS.

New-York Printed:

Sold by R. Aitken, Bookseller, opposite the London Coffee-House, Front-Street.

M.DCC.LXXVI.

(Price, Bound, One Dollar.)

T O

JOHN ELLIS Esqr

Fellow of the Royal Societys of

LONDON and *UPSAL*

Agent for the Province of West-Florida.

This Work is with the greatest Respect most humbly Dedicated: by

His most Obedient

humble Servant

Bernard Romans.

Harv
F 314
R 75

INTRODUCTION.

PREFACES, *at this present day become such impertinent things, that it is almost improper to offer one without an apology.*

The many different reports which have prevailed in America, since the cession of the Floridas, concerning their state, situation, and soil, joined to the natural desire of those concerned, to see a good account of these so celebrated countries, I hope will be apology enough in the present case.

Conscious of being, from experience, sufficiently enabled to give a just account of them, I have undertaken the following sketch, or out-lines, of a future natural history of those countries, in hopes that some abler hand may be thereby induced to take up the pen, and furnish the world with a complete work of that kind for these provinces; being well assured, that no part of British America will furnish the naturalist with more variety.

I offer this humble attempt without any recommendations or praises of my own; only I beg to assure my reader, that I have, through the whole, adhered so strictly to truth, as to make no one deviation therefrom willingly or knowingly; guarding, on the one hand, against the misrepresentations, wherewith the authors of the numerous and noted puffs, concerning these provinces, have so plentifully interlarded their labours; and, on the other, against the prejudices of

those,

thoſe, who have taken ſo much pains to render this country undeſervedly deſpiſed.

No elegance of ſtyle, nor flowers of rhetoric, muſt be expected from a perſon who is conſcious that he is not ſufficiently acquainted with the language, to write in ſuch a manner as will pleaſe a critical reader; and if he has wrote ſo as to be underſtood, he hopes the candid will excuſe ſuch inaccuracies in compoſition, as it is difficult for a foreigner to avoid.

REASON without experience can do nothing; being no more than the mere dreams, phantaſms, and meteors of ingenious men, who abuſe their time.

There is need of much diligence and labour, before man can be thoroughly inſtructed. LINNEUS.

All things contained in the compaſs of the univerſe declare, as it were with one accord, the infinite wiſdom of the Creator; for whatever ſtrikes our ſenſes, whatever is the object of our thoughts, is ſo contrived as to aſſiſt in manifeſting the divine glory, *i. e.* the ultimate end which God propoſed in all his works. Whoever duly turns his attention to the things on this our terraqueous globe, muſt neceſſarily confeſs, that they are ſo connected ſo linked together, that they all tend to the ſame end, and to this end a vaſt number of intermediate ends are neceſſary.

ISAAC BIBERG.

Man, the ſervant and explainer of nature, obſerves and practiſes as much as he has learned, concerning her order, effect, and power; further he neither knows nor can do.

BACON.

LIST

A CONCISE NATURAL HISTORY OF *East and West-Florida.*

A DESCRIBER of countries, ought in a great meaſure, to imitate a building Engineer, in firſt laying before thoſe, whom he will employ, accurate and diſtinct plans of his intended work, thereby enabling them to judge more diſtinctly of the execution thereof. I think that in a work of this nature, i could not do this better that by directing my readers to the charts or plans accompanying it, in which they will undoubtedly find materials to form juſt ideas of the places herein deſcribed.

To reduce my work to ſome regularity, i ſhall proceed from the Eaſt, Weſtward, and begin with the Peninſula, dividing it into two parts, which i will call climates, the one beginning at Amelia or St. Mary's inlet, in latitude 31 : and extending Southward to the latitude of 27 : 40 : this will include the rivers St. Mary, Naſſau, St. John's or Ylacco, and the Muſketo Lagoon (for ſurely no one can call this laſt a river) beſides ſeveral ſmaller ones, which will be mentioned in their places ;

theſe all empty themſelves on the Eaſtern ſide of the Apalachicola (the boundary between the two Floridas) the Oſkaùlaſkna the Apalachian, St. Juan de Guacaro, vulgarly called little Seguana, the river Amaxura, and the Manatee, which laſt falls into the bay of Tampe, or harbour of Spirito Santo, and which i have firſt diſcovered.

The other, or Southern climate, beginning at the latitude 27 : 40 : and extending Southward to the latitude of 25, on the main, or to 24 : 17 : including the keys ; this contains a large river, which empties itſelf into the new harbour, of which i am the firſt explorer, we have given it the name of Charlotte harbour, but neither harbour nor river have been deſcribed by the Spaniards in their maps, and the Spaniſh fiſhermen diſtinguiſh the place by the names of its inlets, which are five, and will hereafter be deſcribed ; next is Carlos bay and Carlos harbour, into which the river Coloosa-hatcha empties itſelf ; further South are not any more deſerving the name of rivers, but ſuch as they are, i ſhall give them a place alſo ; on the Eaſt ſide is only the river St. Lucia, with its Southern branch, the river Ratones, and the Lagoon, known by the name of Aïſa Hatcha, Rio d'ais, or Indian river, ſome others can ſcarcely be ranked among rivers, but will likewiſe be more particularly mentioned hereafter.

After this general diviſion of the country, i think it is not improper to begin with an account of the air, which this province enjoys very pure and clear fogs are ſeldom known any where except upon St. John's river, but the dews are very heavy, the ſpring and ſummer are in general dry, the autumn very changeable ; the beginning of

winter

winter wet and ſtormy, but the latter part very dry and ſerene; from the end of September to the end of June, there is perhaps not any where a more delightful climate to be found, but all July, Auguſt, and moſt of September are exceſſively hot, yet the changes from hot to cold are not ſo ſudden, as in Carolina, and froſt is not frequently known, the noon day's ſun is always warm, the ſevereſt cold ever known there affects not the tender china orange trees, which grow here to a very great perfection, i ſcruple not to ſay, that this fruit here exceeds in goodneſs every other of the kind i have yet ſeen, however the change from the middle of this climate, to the Northern part of it is much more perceptible from heat to cold, than it was to the ſouthward from cold to heat, in the year 1770 and 1771. I felt very ſevere weather about the river Naſſau, and to the ſouthward of the town of St. Auguſtine, the climate changes ſo gradually, that it is not perceivable to the above named lat. of 27 : 40 : where there is no froſt at all, and which I have always ſet down as the line of no froſt. From this line to the ſouthern extent is a moſt charming climate, the air almoſt always ſerene; on the eaſt ſide the common trade wind, and on the weſt ſide the Apalachian ſea breeze from the weſt to the north-weſt, refreſh this delighful Peninſula during the ſummer; here we find all the produce of more northern climes mixed with the inhabitants of the Tropics, and this as well in the water as on the land, nor is there ever ſo great a cold as to deſtroy the fruits of the ſouth, nor ſo great a heat as to parch the produce of the north; in all this Peninſula it is remarkable, that rain is always prognoſticated one or two days be-

fore

fore it falls, and this by either an immoderate dew or no dew at all, ſo that if a very heavy dew falls, it is a certain ſign of rain, and the ſame if on a calm fine night, there be no dew, but i cannot account for this phenomenon.

The winds are not ſo very changeable here as they are further to the northward, but are during the greateſt part of ſpring, the whole ſummer, and beginning of autumn, generally between the eaſt and ſouth eaſt, and during the laſt of autumn, and firſt part of winter, they are commonly in the north eaſt quarter; the latter part of the winter, and firſt of ſpring they are more generally weſt and north weſt, the autumnal equinox is to be dreaded here, as well two or three weeks before, as two or three months after it, great ſtorms will then happen, and many veſſels are drove on ſhore, or otherwiſe diſabled: I have never heard of much miſchief in the vernal equinox, and if a hurricane was ever known in this Peninſula, it was on the 29th of October 1769, when there was a terrible guſt between the lat. 25: 10, and 25: 50, which blew many trees down, and drove the Snow Ledbury a ſhore, where ſhe remained dry on a key, now diſtinguiſhed by her name, but heretofore conſidered as a part of what was improperly called by the name of Key Largo.

The fatal hurricane of Auguſt 30, 31, September 1, 2, 3, anno 1772, was ſeverely felt in Weſt Florida, it deſtroyed the woods for about 30 miles from the ſea coaſt in a terrible manner, what were its effects in the unſettled countries to the eaſtward, we cannot learn; in Penſacola it did little or no miſchief except the breaking down of all the wharfs but one; but farther weſtward, it was

terrible

terrible; at Mobile every thing was in confuſion, veſſels, boats, and loggs were drove up into the ſtreets a great diſtance, the gullies and hollows as well as all the lower grounds of this town were ſo filled with loggs, that many of the inhabitants got the greateſt part of their yearly proviſion of firewood there; all the vegitables were burned up by the ſalt water, which was by the violence of the wind, carried over the town, ſo as at the diſtance of half a mile, it was ſeen to fall like rain; all the lower floors of the houſes were covered with water, but no houſes were hurt except one, which ſtood at the water ſide, in which lived a joiner, a ſchooner drove upon it, and they alternately deſtroyed each other; but the greateſt fury of it was ſpent on the neighbourhood of the Paſca Oocolo river; the plantation of Mr. Krebs there was almoſt totally deſtroyed, of a fine crop of rice, and a large one of corn were ſcarcely left any remains, the houſes were left uncovered, his ſmith's ſhop was almoſt all waſhed away, all his works and out houſes blown down; and for thirty miles up a branch of this river which (on account of the abundance of that ſpecies of cypreſs * vulgarly called white cedar) is called cedar river, there was ſcarce a tree left ſtanding, the pines were blown down or broke, and thoſe which had not intirely yielded to this violence, were ſo twiſted, that they might be compared to ropes; at Botereaux's cow pen, the people were above ſix weeks conſulting on a method of finding and bringing home their cattle; twelve miles up the river, live ſome Germans who, ſeeing the water riſe with ſo incredible a rapidity, were almoſt embarked, fearing an univerſal flood, but the water not riſing over their land,

* Cupreſſus Thyoides.

they

they did not proceed on their intended journey to the Chactaw nation. At Yoani, in this nation, i am told the effects were perceivable; in all this tract of coaſt and country the wind had ranged between the ſouth ſouth eaſt and eaſt, but farther weſt its fury was between the north north eaſt and eaſt, a ſchooner belonging to the government having a detachment of the ſixteenth regiment on board, was drove by accident to the weſtward as far as Cat Iſland, where ſhe lay at an anchor under the weſt point, the water roſe ſo high, that when ſhe parted her cables, ſhe floated over the iſland, the wind north by eaſt, or thereabout ſhe was forced upon the Free maſons iſlands, and lay about 6 weeks before ſhe was got off, and if they had not accidentally been diſcovered by a hunting boat, the people might have remained there and died for want, particularly as water failed them already when diſcovered; the effect of this different direction of the current of air or wind was here ſurpriſing, the ſouth eaſterly wind having drove the water in immenſe quantities up all the rivers, bays, and ſounds to the weſtward, being here counteracted by the northerly wind, this body of water was violently forced into the bay of Spirito Santo at the back of the Chandeleurs, grand Gozier, and Breton Iſles, and not finding ſufficient vent up the rigolets, nor down the outlets of the bay, it forced a number of very deep channels through theſe iſlands, cutting them into a great number of ſmall iſlands. The high iſland of the Chandeleur had all the ſurface of its ground waſhed off, and i really think, had not the clay been held faſt by the roots of the black mangrove, and in ſome places the myrtle (Myrica)

there

there would have been ſcarce a veſtige of the iſland left; at the mouth of Miſſiſippi all the ſhipping was drove into the marſhes; a Spaniſh brig foundered and parted, and a large crew was loſt, ſome of the people were taken from a piece of her at ſea, by a ſloop from Penſacola a few days after; in the lakes at Chef Menteur, and in the paſſes of the rigolets, the water roſe prodigiouſly and covered the low iſlands there two feet; at St. John's Creek, and New Orleans, the tide was thought extraordinary high, but at all theſe laſt places there was no wind felt, being a fine ſerene day with a ſmall air from the eaſtward.

The moſt extraordinary effect of this hurricane was the production of a ſecond crop of leaves and fruit on all the mulberry trees in this country, a circumſtance into which i very carefully enquired, but could not learn from the oldeſt and moſt curious obſervers that this had ever happened before; this tardy tree budded, foliated, bloſſomed, and bore ripe fruit with the amazing rapidity of only four weeks time immediately after the guſt, and no other trees were thus affected.

The ſouth and ſouth weſt winds make a thick heavy air, and are in my opinion hurtful to the lungs; they alſo occaſion the ſultry weather, ſo much complained of in July and Auguſt. The winds from the eaſtern quarter every where between the ſouth eaſt and the north eaſt, are cool and moiſt, and they cauſe the frequent ſhowers, by which the very ſand of this climate is endued with ſo prodigious a vegetative power that it amazes every one. The winds from the eaſt to the north are agreeably cool, and from the north to the north weſt, occaſion what is here called cold weather; i

have

have frequently kept thermometrical journals, but have none left now for inſpection.

I remember the general height of the mercury on Fahrenheit's ſcale, to have been, in the ſhade where the air was not prevented circulating freely about it, between 84° and 88° and on ſome ſultry hot days in July and Auguſt, i have known it to riſe up to 94°, when at the ſame time by carrying it out and expoſing it to the ſun, it will riſe in a very ſhort time up to 114°, nor can i remember ever to have ſeen it above one or two degrees below the freezing point; it is impoſſible for one to imagine how inexpreſſibly temperate the weather is here from the latter end of September to the latter end of June; the weſtern part of this northern diviſion is not ſo very hot in ſummer, as the whole eaſtern ſhore of the Peninſula is, but its ſea ſhore is much more expoſed to the bleak winter winds.

In the ſouthern diviſion i have never ſeen the mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer below the temperate point, and i cannot remember ever to have ſeen it higher than in the northern diviſion.

This ſouthern part of the Peninſula is in the months of May, June, July, and Auguſt very ſubject, on its weſt ſide, to dreadful ſqualls, and there is a certainty of one or more of theſe tornadoes every day, when during that ſeaſon, the wind comes any where between the ſouth ſouth eaſt, and ſouth weſt, but they are of very ſhort duration; then alſo thunder and lightning is frequent, but nothing near ſo violent as in Carolina and Georgia, nor do i remember any more than one inſtance of damage occaſioned by it, when it made a large hole in a ſtone wall of a houſe at St. Auguſtine; yet very few electrical conductors are made uſe of there. Be-

Before i quit this ſubject of the air, i cannot help taking notice of a remark, which i have read ſome where, made by Dr. James McKenzie, which is that dampneſs or diſcoloring of plaiſter, and wainſcoat, the ſoon moulding of bread, moiſtneſs of ſpunge, diſſolution of loaf ſugar, ruſting of metals, and rotting of furniture, are certain marks of a bad air; now every one of thoſe marks except the laſt, are more to be ſeen at St. Auguſtine, than in any place i ever was at, and yet i do not think, that on all the continent, there is a more healthy ſpot; burials have been leſs frequent here, than any where elſe, where an equal number of inhabitants is to be found, and it was remarked during my ſtay there, that when a detachment of the royal regiment of artillery once arrived there in a ſickly ſtate, none of the inhabitants caught the contagion, and the troops themſelves ſoon recruited; i alſo know of ſeveral aſthmatic and conſumptive ſubjects, who have been greatly relieved there; the Spaniſh inhabitants lived here to a great age, and certain it is, that the people of the Havannah looked on it as their Montpelier, frequenting it for the ſake of health; i therefore aſcribe the above circumſtances to the nature of the ſtone, wherewith the houſes are built.

Haloes, or as they are vulgarly called circles round the ſun and moon, are very often ſeen, and are ſure forerunners of rain if not wind ſtorms; thoſe of the ſun are leſs frequent, but they are always followed by very violent gales of wind; it is remarkable, that if in thoſe haloes a break is obſerved, that break is always towards the quarter, from whence the wind begins; water ſpouts are often ſeen along this coaſt, but i cannot learn that

they ever occaſioned any miſchief, nor could i learn, that earthquakes have ever been experienced in this part of the world.

Of Weſt Florida, there needs ſcarce any thing more to be ſaid, with regad to the article of climate, or air, than what i have ſaid of my northern diviſion of Eaſt Florida, it agreeing in every reſpect therewith, except that the winter is ſomething more ſevere, it often killing tender fruit trees;* however, as the ſickneſs of 1765 at Mobile, has been a ſubject of much diſcourſe, and as it has been ſet up (by people who would if poſſible prevent the population of ſo fine a country) as a ſcarecrow to ſuch, as are eaſily deceived by appearances, and never enquire deeper than external ſhews; this fatal diſorder has been followed by the entire ruin of Mobile, and had nearly ſpoiled the reputation of Penſacola, which though ſituate in as fine, airy, dry and healthy a ſite as any on the continent, and at leaſt at a diſtance of ſixty miles from Mobile, had yet the misfortune to be confounded with it, and to be thought liable to the ſame misfortunes; i will give as faithful an account of that illneſs, as has come within the verge of my knowledge.

Mobile was originally built by the French, after they had left their old Fort Condè, thirty miles higher up the Tombecbé, having found that ſituation very inconvenient; they now made at leaſt as injudicious a choice in another reſpect, by placing themſelves at a diſtance from good water, on low ground, and directly oppoſite to ſome marſhy iſlands, at the diviſion between the ſalt and freſh water, a ſituation well known in America not to be eligible for the ſake of health, but the

* In 1771-2, it killed apple and pear trees.

con-

convenience of the navigation up to it being the beſt in their poſſeſſion at that time, its being a barrier againſt the Spaniards, and the eaſy communication with the Chactaw and Upper Creek nations, as well as with the Miſſiſſippi, made people forget the evils attending it, and it ſoon became, from a fort, a pretty town, with ſome very good houſes built in no inelegant taſte, yet the French inhabitants duly obſerving the inconveniencies of this unhealthy ſpot, adapted their conſtitutions to it, by a regular ſober life, being uncommonly careful to get their drinking water from a rivulet at the diſtance of three miles, where it is very good, neither did they give into exceſs of drinking ſpirituous liquors and wine, and at the ſeaſon, when the continued heat cauſed a putrefaction of the water in pools, and exhaled the moiſture of this low ground, thereby filling the air with noxious vapours, and thus occaſioning the acute epidemical diſorders (that proved ſo fatal in the year 1765) thoſe prudent inhabitants retired to their plantations up or down the river, ſome even at a ſmall diſtance, there to enjoy a freer circulation of a leſs putrified air, thus alſo by the depopulation of the town, the remaining inhabitants ſuffered leſs by being leſs crowded together, aud there were ſuch inſtances of longevity here as are not to be outdone in any part of America. Let me beg leave to mention among many others, one more commonly known, it is the Chevalier de Lucere's family, who are now all very old, and whoſe mother not many years ſince died by breaking one of her legs, that had been ſo much calcarizated by the gout, that it ſnapped by ſtepping into bed, ſhe died aged far above one hundred years. One other i ſhall mention,

tion, more familiar to me, which is that of one Mr. François, who lives now about five miles below the river Poule: In September 1771, i called there, the old man told me he was then past eighty three years of age, that the old woman, whom i saw putting bread into the oven, was his mother; and that she was one of the first women that came from France to this country; i saw her about her domestick business in many ways; in a very cheerful manner, singing and running from place to place as briskly as a girl of twenty; Mr. François told me, that at the age of sixty he fell out of a pine tree, above fifty feet high, with his loins over a fallen one, that he with difficulty recovered, and that had it not been for that accident, he would not, as he thinks, yet have been sensible of the heavy hand of time; that he was still a hearty cheerful old man, was evidently to be seen; when i came to the river Poule in October 1772, i met the same old gentleman fishing at the mouth of the river, on my asking him whether this diversion was agreeable to him, he told me; that his mother had an inclination to eat fish, and he was come to get her a mess; he was then on foot and had five miles to come to this place, and as much back with his prey, after catching it; a very dutiful son this at eighty five! He lives comfortably at an agreeable place, and on the produce of a midling large stock of cattle.

Many more of this kind might be mentioned, but these two being more universally known, i chose to relate them only. Far otherwise was it with our sons of incontinence, who upon their arrival, and after their first taking possession of this country, lived there so fast, that their race was

too

too ſoon ſcampered over; midnight carouzals, and the converting day into night, and night into day was all the ſtudy of thoſe gay, thoſe thoughtleſs men, who ſported with their lives; as with a toy not worth eſteeming; the fatal effects of their debauches; joined to the conſequences of the ſituation of their reſidence, made their lives indeed comparable to graſs, flouriſhing to day, and withering to morrow; but as if a puniſhment for this abandoned life, was not ſufficiently incurred by its own fatality, in the year 1765 arrived a regiment (i think the twenty firſt) from Jamaica, with them they brought a contagious diſtemper; contracted either in the iſland, or on their paſſage; theſe men, like moſt ſoldiers; lived a life of intemperance, and beſides, drank the water out of the ſtagnated pools, which i myſelf have even in the winter, ſeen ſuch as to fill a man with horror at the thought of making uſe thereof, this and other inconveniences of a ſoldier's life, joined to their arriving in a bad ſeaſon, ſwept them off ſo as ſcarce to leave a living one to bury the dead. See there the true reaſon of the fickly character of the climate, and of the deſtruction of this once flouriſhing town, whoſe ſituation by far exceeds that of Savannah in Georgia, in every reſpect.

It is an almoſt invariable rule for people, who intend going to a different climate, to conſult ſome friend or acquaintance on the manner of life, he would adviſe him to lead, i have never yet heard of one going to Florida, who was not told by his friend, that a free glaſs was neceſſary; how true this is, i ſhall not pretend to ſay, but certain it is, that the advice is almoſt always too freely followed, the free glaſs generally degenerating into a glaſs of exceſs.

Not

Notwithſtanding all i have above aſſerted, it is not to be denied, that during the hot months, the air is not ſo wholeſome as in the other ſeaſons, but even then it does not ſo much affect careful ſtrangers, and new comers, as thoſe who have been ſome time there and live irregular lives.

The night air is not ſo much to be dreaded here, as in countries where the ſun is vertical, or nearly ſo, and conſequently, by its long abſence, makes a chilling penetrating night follow a burning day, but here it is not long enough abſent to cool the atmoſphere ſufficiently to hurt the unwearied ſleeper, who during the firſt heat of a ſultry night perhaps has expoſed his open pores to the mercy of the air.

The atmoſphere is, during this ſeaſon, ſo burning hot, that undoubtedly very ſudden rarefactions of the humours are often experienced, which cauſe ſuch abundant perſpiration, that water, as ſoon as drank, penetrates the open pores, ſo that the human ſkin ſeems to be comparable to a wet ſpunge when ſqueezed; yet although the water is here very cool (and if it has not this quality naturally, it is artificially made to acquire it) we never hear of the fatal effects of water drinking, ſo often experienced in the cities of New York and Philadelphia, the reaſon perhaps is, that it is ſeldom if ever drank unmixed.

I will however venture to foretell, that on opening the woods of this country for cultivation, which will naturally drain ponds, gullies, &c. the air will be here very little affected by thoſe pernicious vapours, which have ſo uncommon an influence over the humours and fibrous parts of the human frame, as to deſtroy their harmonious con-

cordance

cordance (may i be admitted the phraſe?) and occaſioning them to relax, and thereby producing weakneſſes, laſſitudes, and finally dangerous and fatal diſorders.

If we conſider the effects of heat and humidity on the hardeſt ſubſtances, ſuch as wood, and even metals, which are thereby expanded, and have the union of their ſolid parts relaxed, it may give us an idea, how much more their effects muſt be felt in the animal œconomy at times, when fire and water unite their diſſolving powers to act on all nature.

A very dry hot air, though leſs dangerous to the body, than a hot moiſt one, has yet very nearly the ſame effects, as it partially dries the Ponds, Marſhes, Swamps, &c. leaving the remaining water and mud to exhale, and ſpread their noxious vapours through the atmoſphere.

Every inhabitant of any part of America knows, that the ſudden tranſitions from cold to heat ſo prevalent on that continent, are much more to be dreaded, than any of the above named cauſes of immoderate heat, cold, moiſture, and drought.

I am now to conſider the nature and appearance of the earth, which in this part of America, may be divided into ſix different ſorts, much the ſame as in Carolina, with this diſtinction, that it is much more unequally divided.

I ſhall treat of them by the names of pine land, Hammock land, ſavannahs, ſwamps, marſhes, and bay, or cypreſs galls.

Firſt the pine land, commonly called pine barren, which makes up the largeſt body by far, the Peninſula being ſcarce any thing elſe; but about an hundred miles towards the north weſt from St.

Auguſ-

Auguſtine, and about two hundred from the ſea in Weſt Florida, carry us intirely out of it. This land conſiſts of a grey, or white ſand, and in many places of a red or yellow gravel; it produces a great variety of ſhrubs or plants, of which i ſhall hereafter deſcribe ſome, the principal produce from whence it derives its name is the *pinus foliis longiſſimis ex una theca ternis*, or yellow pine and pitch pine tree, which i take to be a variety of the ſame ſpecies, both excellent and good timber.

Alſo the *chamærops frondibus palmatis plicatis ſtipitibus ſerratis*, of whoſe fruit all animals are very fond.

It is on this kind of land, that immenſe ſtocks of cattle are maintained, although the moſt natural graſs on this ſoil is of a very harſh nature, and the cattle not at all fond of it, it is known by the name of wire graſs; and they only eat it while young; for the procuring it young or renewing this kind of paſture, the woods are frequently fired, and at different ſeaſons, in order to have a ſucceſſion of young graſs, but the ſavannahs that are interſperſed in this kind of land furniſh a more plentiful and more proper food for the cattle.

Some high pine hills are ſo covered with two or three varieties of the *quercus* or oak ſo as to make an underwood to the lofty pines; and a ſpecies of dwarf cheſnut is often found here; another ſpecies of a larger growth is alſo found in the lower parts, particularly in the edges of the bay or cypreſs galls.

This barren and unfavourable ſoil in a wet ſeaſon bears many things far beyond expectation; and is very uſeful for the cultivation of peach and mulberry orchards; this land might alſo be rendered uſeful for many other purpoſes, but either

the

the people do not chooſe to go out of the old beaten track, or content themſelves with looking elſewhere for new land improveable with leſs coſt; the method of meliorating it is certainly obvious to the meaneſt capacity, as it every where, at a greater or leſs depth, covers a ſtiff marly kind of clay, which I am certain, was it properly mixed with the land, would render it fertile, and this might be done with little expence, the clay laying in ſome places within half a foot or a foot of the ſurface; in moſt places it is found at the depth of three, four, or five feet, conſequently not very hard to come at. In Eaſt Florida, in the ſouthern parts, this kind of land is often very rocky, but eſpecially from the latitude 25: 50, ſouthward to the point, where it is a ſolid rock, of a kind of lime ſtone covered with innumerable ſmall, looſe and ſharp ſtones, every where.

In Weſt Florida the pine land is alſo frequently found rocky, with an iron ſtone, eſpecially near where the pines are found growing in a gravelly tract, which is frequently the caſe here;

The hammock land ſo called from its appearing in tufts among the lofty pines; ſome ſmall ſpots of this kind, if ſeen at a diſtance, have a very romantick appearance; the large parcels of it often divide ſwamps, creeks, or rivers from the pine land; this is indeed its moſt common ſituation; the whole of the up lands, remote from the ſea in the northern parts, is this kind of land, its ſoil is various, in ſome places a ſand of divers colours, and in Eaſt Florida, often a white ſand; but the true hammock ſoil is a mixture of clay and a blackiſh ſand, and in ſome ſpots a kind of ochre, in Eaſt Florida ſome of this is alſo ſometimes

found rocky; on every kind of this land lays a ſtratum of black mould, made by the decayed leaves &c. of the wood and other plants growing upon it; the ſalts contained in this ſtratum render it very fruitful, and when cleared this is the beſt; nay the only fit land for the production of indigo, potatoes, and pulſe; the firſt crops, by means of the manure above mentioned, generally are very plentiful, but the ſalts being ſoon evaporated, if the ſoil over which it lay, ſhould prove to be ſand, it is not better than pine land; the other ſort bears many years planting; its natural produce is ſo various in this clin ate, that the compleat deſcription of all, would be more work than one man's life time would be ſufficient for, the principal however are the following:

Quercus alba Virginiana.	Virginian white oak.
Quercus alba pumilis.	Dwarf white oak, or poſt oak.
Quercus, foliis oblongis non ſinuatis, ſemper virens.	Evergreen oak with oblong entire leaves, or live oak.
Quercus nigra, folio non ſerrato, in ſummitate quaſi triangulo.	Black oak, with leaves ſerrated, and their tops almoſt triangular.
Quercus nigra foliis cunei forma, obſolete trilobis.	Black oak, with wedge ſhaped leaves, and having imperfectly three lobes.
Quercus nigra Marilandica, folio trifido, ad ſaſſafras accidente.	Black Maryland oak, with trifid leaves reſembling ſaſſafras.

Quercus Carolina

Quercus rubra Carolinenſis, virens muricata. Carolina red oak, prickly when young.

Quercus caſtaneæ foliis, procera arbor. Cheſnut leaved oak of a large ſize.

Juglans alba, fructu ovato compreſſo profundè inſculpto duriſſimo, cavitate intus minima. White walnut, or hickory with egg ſhaped fruit cloſely graſped, and buried, in a very hard ſhell, with the ſmalleſt inward cavities

Juglans Virginiana alba minor. Small Virginian hickory tree.

Nux juglans nigra. Black walnut.

Fagus humilis (ſeu caſtanea, pumila) racemoſa fructu parvo; in capſulis echinatis, ſingulo. Smalleſt fagus (or dwarf cheſnut) having the fruit in bunches, and contained ſingly in a prickly pod, vulgo chinkapin.

Fagus foliis lanceolatis ovatis, acute ſerratis ſubtus tomentoſis, amentis filiformi nodoſis, fructu in capſulis echinatis, duplice. Fagus, with leaves between egg and ſpear ſhaped, ſharply ſerrated and woolly underneath, ſlender knotty catkins, and a double fruit in a prickly pod.

Morus foliis ſubtus tomentoſis amentis longis, diœcis. Mulberry with the under part of the leaves woolly, having long catkins; and trees of different ſexes.

Morus, loti arboris inſtar, Mulberry reſembling

ramoſa the

ramoſa; foliis ampliſſimis.

the lote-tree full of branches; and large leaves.

Morus foliis palmatis, cortice filamentoſa, fructu nigro, radice tinctoria.

Mulberry with hand ſhaped leaves a threadⁱ bark, black fruit, and the root containing a dye.

Dioſpyros guajacana.

Parſimmon.

Liquidambar, ſtyraciflua; aceris folio.

Maple leaved liquidamber, yielding ſtorax or ſweet gum.

Boraſſus frondibus palmatis (ſeu) palma coccifera latifolio, fructu atro purpureo, omnium minimo.

Boraſſus, with hand or fan ſhaped leaves (or) ſcarlet yielding palm, with broad leaves, and a deep purple fruit which is the leaſt of all.

Palma humilis (ſeu) chamæriphis.

Dwarf palm, or chamæriphis.

Laurus foliis acuminatis, baccis cæruleis, pedicellis longis rubris inſidentibus.

Laurel, with pointed leaves, and blue berries, ſitting on long red foot ſtalks.

Laurus (ſeu cinnamomum ſylveſtre) Americana.

The wild American cinnamon Laurel.

Laurus (ſeu) cornus mas odorata, folio trefido, margine plano, ſaſſafras dicta.

The male ſcented cornel or laurel tree, with a trifid leaf, having plain edges, called ſaſſafras.

Liliodendron tulipifera, tripartito, aceris folio,

Tulip bearing liliodendron, with a tripartite maple leaf, having

media

media lacinia velut abſciſſa.
ing the middle piece ſeemingly cut off.

Magnolia maximo flore, foliis ſubtus ferrugineis.
Magnolia, with the largeſt flower, and the lower ſide of the leaves ferrugineous.

Magnolia glauca laurifolio ſubtus albicante.
Magnolia, with a grey laurel leaf whitiſh below.

Magnolia flore albo, folio majore acuminato haud albicante.
Magnolia, with a white flower, a larger pointed leaf, and not whitiſh.

Magnolia tripetala ampliſſimo flore albo, fructu coccineo.
Magnolia, with a very large white flower of three petals; and a ſcarlet fruit.

Citrus (ſeu) malus aurantia acida.
The ſour orange.

* *Illicium floridanum (ſeu) aniſum ſtellatum.*
Starry anniſeed, or ſkimmi.

Kalmia, foliis glabris lanceolatis; et corolla campanulæ hypocrateriqne forma.
Kalmia, with ſmooth lanceolate leaves, and a corolla between ſalver and bell ſhaped.

Ficus Americana, citri folio, fructu parvo purpureo.
American fig, with a citron leaf and a ſmall purple fruit.

Coccoloba (ſeu) prunus maritima racemoſa, folio ſubrotundo, venoſo
Coccoloba, or ſea ſide plumb, growing in bunches, an almoſt round veined leaf, &

fructu
the

* Firſt found growing near Penſacola, by a free Negro (Pompey) formerly belonging to Chief Juſtice Cliſton, which Negro in his own way is a curious herbaliſt.

fructu cæruleo quaſi purpureo.	the fruit blue, inclined to purple.
Coccoloba foliis oblongis ovatis venoſis, uvis minoribus corinthiacis.	Coccoloba, with oblong egg ſhaped veined leaves, with pointed grape like fruit leſs than currants.
Zantoxylum ſpinoſum album, quaſi fraxini folio, evonymi fructu capſulari.	Tooth ach tree, with white ſpines almoſt an aſh leaf, and the capſulum like the fruit of the ſpindle tree.

The ſavannah's are in this country of two very different kinds, the one is to be found in the pine lands; and notwithſtanding the black appearance of the ſoil, they are as much a white ſand as the higher lands round them; true it is that clay is very often much nearer to their ſurface, than in the higher pine lands; they are a kind of ſinks or drains to thoſe higher lands, and their low ſituation only prevents the growth of pines in them. In wet weather the roads leading through them are almoſt impaſſable. On account of their producing ſome ſpecies of graſs of a better kind than the wire graſs, they are very often ſtiled meadows, and i believe, if they could be improved by draining them, without taking away all their moiſture, very uſeful graſs might be raiſed in them; but on draining them completely, they prove to be as arrant a ſand as any in this country. Theſe ſavannahs often have ſpots in them more low than common, and filled with water; they are over grown with different ſpecies of the *cratægus*, or hawthorn, as alſo very often a ſpecies of ſhrub much

much reſembling the *Laurus* in appearance, but as i never had an opportunity of ſeeing it in bloſſom, i cannot deſcribe it, ſo as to aſcertain the genus it belongs to; in its fruit it is widely different from any of the laurel kind, that have fallen under my inſpection; it is a bacca with ſeveral cells full of an agreeable acid like the common lime from the Weſt Indies; it is of the ſize of a large pigeon's egg, but more oblong; we alſo find it on the low banks of rivers in Georgia, and know it by the name of the Ogeechee lime. The other ſavannahs differ very widely from theſe, and are chiefly to be found in Weſt Florida, they conſiſt of a high ground often with ſmall gentle riſings in them, ſome are of a vaſt extent, and on the weſt of Miſſiſſippi, they are ſaid to be many days journey over, the largeſt within my knowledge is on the road from the Chactaw to the Chicaſaw nation, and is in length near forty miles over from north to ſouth, and from one end to the other, a horizon, ſimilar to that at ſea, appears; there is generally a rivulet at one or other, or at each end of the ſavannahs, and ſome come to the river banks; in one or two of them i have ſeen ſome very ſmall remains of ancient huts, by which i judge, they were formerly inhabited by indians; the ſoil here is very fertile; in ſome i have ſeen foſſil ſhells in great numbers, in others, flint, in others again, ſome chalk and marl; it is remarkable, that cattle are very fond of the graſſes growing here; the Chicaſaw old field, as it is termed, is a clear demonſtration of this, for the cattle will come to it from any diſtance, even when the graſs ſcarcely appears; and in all the circumjacent tract, are abundance of both winter and ſummer canes to be found, on which

they

they might more luxuriously feed. In theſe ſavannahs if a well or pond is dug, the water has a very ſtrong nitrous taſte. I have ſeen ſome very curious plants in this kind of ground, but there was no time for my examining any of them, except a nondeſcript of the genus *Tagetes* of a fine crimſon colour. I ſhall in ſome meaſure deſcribe and give the figure of this plant. The only high growth i have ſeen in theſe ſavannahs are ſome willows and other aquatic plants, by the ſide of rivulets, in or near them; ſome of the ſmaller kind of oaks and a few ſmall *junipers* are alſo to be ſeen in thoſe places, the *fragaria* orſtrawberry is very common in them.

Swamps are alſo found of two kinds, river and inland ſwamps, thoſe on the rivers are juſtly eſteemed the moſt valuable, and the more ſo, if they are in the tide way, becauſe then the river water may be at pleaſure let on or kept out, with much leſs labour and expence than in the other kinds; theſe lands are the ſources of riches in theſe provinces, becauſe where they lay between the ſandy pine barrens, they produce that valuable ſtaple Rice, and on the Miſſiſſippi (where much of this river land is ſituated a great deal higher, than the common run of it in Carolina, and other ſimilar countries) this ſoil is the beſt adapted for corn and indigo, yet known; ſome of theſe grounds are clay, others ſand, and others again partake of both; when uſed for rice, it matters not which of theſe ſoils they are made up of, but I believe, were the ſandy ones to be quite drained, they would prove barren enough; the uſe of water on rice is more to ſuppreſs the growth of noxious weeds and graſs, which would otherwiſe ſtifle the grain, than for promoting the growth of the rice itſelf, for none

of

of the graſſes can ſtand the water, but rice does, as long as it is not totally immerſed, therefore it is, that after weeding, the planter (if he has it convenient) lets on water to about half the height of his grain; by ſwamps then in general is to be underſtood any low ground ſubject to inundations, diſtinguiſhed from marſhes, in having a large growth of timber, and much underwood, canes, reeds, wythes, vines, briars and ſuch like, ſo matted together, that they are in a great meaſure impenetrable to man or beaſt; the produce of theſe ſwamps if ſandy is more generally the cypreſs tree, which is here of three ſpecies; two of theſe grow in this kind of land; the common ſort grows to an enormous ſize, but none ſo large, as what is ſeen on or near the banks of the Miſſiſſippi, the other kind vulgarly miſcalled white cedar, is in great quantities near Penſacola, particularly in the ſwamps of Cheſter River; this likewiſe grows to a tree which may be ranked among thoſe of the firſt magnitude: If theſe ſwamps are not altogether ſand, but mixed with clay, and other earth, their produce is in general.

Cupreſſus Americana foliis deciduis.	American deciduous cypreſs
Cupreſſus ſemper virens ſeu cupreſſus Thyoides.	Evergreen cypreſs, vulgo white cedar.
Quercus alba aquatica ſalicis folio breviore.	White ſwamp oak, with a ſhort willow leaf, vulgo water oak.
Quercus folio longo anguſto ſalicis.	Oak with a long narrow willow leaf, vulgo willow oak.

Quercus alba foliis ſuperne latioribus, oppoſite ſinuatis, ſinubus anguliſque obtuſis.

White oak, with the upper leaves broad, oppoſitely ſinuated, the ſinuſſes having obtuſe angles, or the true white oak.

Ilex floridana, foliis dentatis, baccis rubris.

Floridan holly, with indented leaves and red berries.

Acer foliis compoſitis, floribus racemoſis.

Maple, with compoſite leaves and the flowers in bunches.

Acer foliis quinque partito palmatis acuminato dentatis.

Maple, with a palmated leaf of five parts ſharply indented.

Acer foliis quinquelobis ſubdentatis, ſubtus glaucis pedunculis ſimpliſſimis aggregatis.

Maple, with a five lobed leaf faintly indented, their lower part of a blue caſt, with ſimply aggregate flower ſtalks.

Fraxinus floridana, foliis anguſtioribus utrinque acuminatis pendulis.

Floridan aſh, with narrow hanging leaves on both ends pointed.

Nyſſa foliis latis acuminatis et dentatis fructu æleagni majore.

Tupelo, with broad pointed and indented leaves, with a fruit like the largeſt wild olive.

Populus alba majoribus foliis ſubcordatis.

Great white popular, with almoſt heart ſhaped leaves.

Populus nigra folio maximo, gemmis balſamum odora-

Black popular, with the largeſt leaves, whoſe bud

odoratiſſimum fundentibus. buds exude an odoriferous gum or balſam.

Platanus occidentalis foliis lobatis. Weſtern plantane, with lobated leaves (vulgo) button wood, water beech, or ſycamore.

Salix folio anguſtiſſimo, longiſſimo ſubtus albo. Willow, with narrow long leaves, being white below.

Bignonia foliis ſimplicibus cordatis, flore ſordidè albo, intus maculis cæruleis et purpureis irregulariter adſperſis; ſilique longiſſima et anguſtiſſima. Bignonia, or trumpet flower, with ſingle heart ſhaped leaves, flowers of a dirty white, through whoſe inſide blue and purple ſpots are irregularly ſcattered, having a long and narrow ſeed pod (vulgo) catalpa.

Bignonia, fraxini foliis. Bignonia, with an aſh leaf.

Laurus foliis acuminatis, baccis cæruleis; pedicellis longis rubris inſidentibus. Laurel, with a pointed leaf, blue berries ſitting on long footſtalks.

Cratægus fructu parvo rubro. Hawthorn, with a ſmall red fruit.

Geniſta capſulo aromatico. Broom, with an aromatic ſeed pod.

Vitis nigra, vulpina dicta. Black vine, called fox grape.

Vitis foliis api, uva corymboſa Parſley leaved vine, with

rymboſa purpura minore.	with ſmall purple grapes in a corymbus.
Vitis vinifera ſilveſtris.	Wild wine vine.
Betula nigra foliis rhombeis ovatis acuminatis duplicato ſerratis	Black birch; with ovate rhomboid leaves, being doubly ſerrated.
Coriaria foliis gladiatis ſerratis (ſeu) nicotiana Indiorum.	Shumac, with ſerrated ſword like leaves, or Savages tobacco,
Rhus vernix (ſeu) toxicodendron foliis alatis fructu rhomboide.	Shumac or poiſon tree, with winged leaves, and a rhomboidal fruit.
Juglans alba aquatica, cortice glabro, arbor humilis; fructu amaro.	White ſwamp hickory, with a ſmooth bark being a dwarf tree and a bitter fruit.
Sambucus racemoſa acinis nigris, caula herbacea.	Elder, with bunches of black berries, and an herbaceous ſtalk.
Sambucus cymis quinquepartitis foliis ſubpinnatis.	Elder, with the cyma of five parts and imperfectly winged leaves.
Magnolia, glauca lauri folio ſubtus albicante.	Magnolia, with a green laurel leaf whitiſh below-
Fagus foliis ovatis obſolete ſerratis; fructu triangulo.	Beech, with almoſt egg ſhaped ſlightly ſerrated leaves and a triangular fruit.
Myrica (ſeu) myrtus (brabantica ſimilis) floridana, baccifera, baccis ſeſſilis; fructu cerifero.	Florida berry-bearing myrtle, the berries ſquat; and yielding wax.

Canna foliis enervibus.	Reed, with very week leaves
Gleditſia ſpinoſa, ſpinis triplicibus axillaribus, capſula ovali, unicum ſemen claudente.	Locuſt, with triple axillary ſpines, an oval ſeed pod incloſing a ſingle ſeed.
Salix folio anguſtiſſimo ſerrato glabro, petiolis dentatis glandu loſis.	Willow, with very narrow ſmooth ſerrated leaves, the ſtalks dentated and full of glandules.

The back or inland ſwamps anſwer in ſituation to what are called the meadows or ſavannahs (among the pine lands) their ſoil being rich, occaſions them to bear trees. The true back ſwamps, that are in wet ſeaſons full of ſtanding water, bear ſcarcely any other tree, than a variety of that ſpecies of Nyſſa diſtinguiſhed by Botaniſts by the name of *Nyſſa foliis latis acuminatis non dentatis fructu æleagni minore, pedunculis multiflore*, vulgarly called bottle arſed tupelo; the continuance of water on this kind of ground, is the reaſon why ſcarce any undergrowth is found here. There are ſwamps alſo called back ſwamps, but they are either at the head of ſome ſtream, or have more or leſs water running through them; theſe are generally eaſy to drain. I would have confined my deſcription of back ſwamps to the firſt or ſtanding ones, and ranked the laſt (which i think might properly be done) among the river ſwamps, but i was apprehenſive, that it might have diſpleaſed ſome perſon, who entertains the more eſtabliſhed opinion; theſe laſt deſcribed often are found meer cypreſs ſwamps, in that caſe, they are almoſt impaſſable, by reaſon

of

of the cypreſs ſpurs, even when dry, and for horſes, they are extremely dangerous, as they often get ſtaked on thoſe ſpurs. This vegetable monſter i ſhall hereafter deſcribe; i do not remember to have ever ſeen it mentioned any where; when this kind of ſwamp is not over grown with cypreſs alone, its product is the ſame as that of the river ſwamps above mentioned, and in that caſe the ſoil is certainly good; theſe laſt when properly drained, are the beſt land for the cultivation of hemp.

The marſhes are next to be conſidered, they are of four kinds, two in the ſalt, and two in the freſh water; they are either ſoft or hard, the ſoft marſhes conſiſting of a very wet clay or mud, are as yet of no uſe, without a very great expence to drain them; the hard ones are made up of a kind of marly clay, which in dry ſeaſons is almoſt burned up, true it is they afford a paſture ſufficient to keep any gramenivorous animals in good order; but the milk and fleſh of them in ſeaſons, when the cattle near the ſea ſide cannot find any other food, and conſequently feed on this alone, are of ſo horrible a taſte, that no ſtranger to the country can make uſe of them. Hard marſhes in general are ſuch, whoſe ſoil has too much ſolidity, for the water to diſunite its particles by penetrating them; the ſoft marſhes are thoſe, whoſe ſpungy nature allows the water eaſily to penetrate them; i have ſeen of both kinds on Turtle River, about twenty miles up, in which, at about eight or ten feet below the ſurface, there are numbers of cypreſs and other ſtumps remaining, but chiefly cypreſs, and many of the fallen trees croſſing each other; this is only to be ſeen at low water, and to the height

above

Avena aquatica Sylvestris

above named; theſe trees are covered with a rich nitrous muddy ſoil; but i beg leave to expect, that better Naturaliſts may explain this extraordinary appearance; i believe them ruins of ancient foreſts on which the ſea has encroached.*

The marſhes on freſh water are in every reſpect ſimilar to thoſe on the ſalt, except, that they are not impregnated with the ſaline particles, of which the firſt are very replete; therefore the hard ones, with little trouble, are adapted to cultivatïon; the ſoft ones coſt a conſiderable deal more of expence, to render them fit to anſwer this purpoſe, but when ſo drained as to anſwer this end, they certainly are by no means inferior to any land in this country; in the lower part of theſe marſhes grows a kind of hitherto undeſcribed grain, of which the weſtern Indians make a great uſe for bread, i never could ſee it in bloſſom, therefore, cannot deſcribe it, but joined to this is a figure of it, nearly equal in ſize to one eighth of the common growth of the plant when in perfection, it is known by the name of wild oats.

This kind of land produces rice very willingly, but if ſufficiently made dry, always proves the beſt for corn, indigo and hemp; i have ſeen at Mr. Brewington's plantation, about three miles below ſavannah in Georgia, very good corn and rice together, with the two kinds of melons, and cucumbers in great perfection on this ſpecies of ſoil.

I ſhall next deſcribe the bay and cypreſs galls; theſe interſect the pine lands, and are ſeldom of any breadth; the bay galls are properly water courſes, covered with a ſpungy earth mixed with

a

* The whole appearance of this river ſeems to indicate ſuch an ancient and unrecorded hurricane on this part of the coaſt.

a kind of matted vegetable fibres; they are ſo very unſtable, as to ſhake for a great extent round a perſon, who, ſtanding on ſome part thereof, moves himſelf ſlightly up and down; they often prove fatal to cattle, aud ſometimes i have been detained for above an hour at the narroweſt paſſes of them, they being ſo dangerous to croſs, that frequently a horſe plunges in, ſo as to leave only his head in ſight; their natural produce is a ſtately tree called loblolly bay,* and many different vines, briars, thorny withs, and on their edges a ſpecies of red or ſummer cane, which together combine to make this ground impenetrable, as if nature had thus intended to prevent the deſtruction of cattle in theſe diſmal bogs, which would be particularly fatal to many of them in ſpring, when the early produce of graſs and green leaves in theſe galls, might entice them into this danger, was not ſuch a natural obſtacle in their way; as theſe have generally vent, they are ſometimes drained, and rice planted therein, which for one or two years thrives there tolerably, but this ground is ſo replete with vitriolic principles, that the water ſtanding in them is impregnated with acid, inſomuch, that i have taſted it ſour enough to have perſuaded a perſon, unacquainted with this circumſtance, that it was an equal portion of vinegar and water mixed together, therefore it requires to lay open at leaſt one year before it will bear any thing, and they generally, by laying open four or five years without any other draining, become quite dry, and might be advantageouſly uſed for paſture ground.

The cypreſs galls differ from theſe, in being a firm ſandy ſoil, in having no vitriolic taſte in the water,

* *Hyperium, ſeu Gordonia Laſianthus.*

water, and very ſeldom vent; i never knew theſe made uſe of for the purpoſe of planting, and the cypreſs they produce, is a dwarf kind, not fit for uſe, being very much twiſted and often hollow, there is no undergrowth here, but in dry ſeaſons ſome tolerable graſs. Through all the above ſpecies of land we find a diſtribution of very fine clay, fit for manufacturing; the fineſt i ever ſaw is at the village on Mobile Bay, where i have ſeen the inhabitants, in imitation of the Savages, have ſeveral rough made veſſels thereof; there is alſo a great variety of nitrous and bituminous earths, foſſills, marles, boles, magnetic and other iron ore, lead, coal, chalk, ſlate, free ſtone, chryſtals, and white topazes, theſe laſt in the beds of rivers; ambergris is ſometimes found; one Stirrup a few years ago found a piece of a very enormous ſize on one of the keys; there is alſo much of a natural pitch or *aſphalthus*, vulgarly called *mungiac*, thrown up by the ſea: The uplands alſo afford a metallic ſubſtance appearing like muſket bullets, which on being thrown into the fire go off in ſmoak with a very ſulphureous ſtench.

The water in this country is very various as to taſte, quality and uſe, there are ſalt, brackiſh, nitrous, ſulphureous, and good freſh ſprings in moſt parts of this country, as well as ſalt and freſh lakes, lagoons and rivers, the rivers alſo vary in many reſpects, and ſo does the ſea as well in the colour, and clearneſs of the water as in its degree of ſaltneſs; the water of St. Mary's and Naſſau, and all the brooks that run into them is very good, wholeſome, and well taſted, the colour in the rivers is dark, as in all the American rivers of the

ſouthern diſtrict; St. John's is a curioſity among rivers indeed, this riſes at a ſmall diſtance from the lagoon called Indian river, ſomewhere in or near the latitude of 27, perhaps out of the lake Mayacco, which i have reaſon to believe really exiſts, and is the head of the river St. Lucia, as i am told by a credible Spaniſh hunter, who had been carried there by way of this laſt river; from its origin it runs through wide extended plains and marſhes, till near the latitude 28, where it approaches the lagoon much, it then continues its courſe with a conſiderable current northward, and glides thro' five great lakes, of which the laſt, called Lake George, is by much the moſt conſiderable; in this laſt lake is about eight feet water, it is twenty miles long and about eleven or twelve wide; all theſe lakes and the river in general is very pleaſant; endleſs orange groves are found here, and indeed on every part of the river; below theſe the river grows wider, loſes it current, and has in ſome places none, in others a retrograde one, when yet lower down it is again in its true direction; the banks of this river are very poor land. and exhibit in a number of places ſad monuments of the folly and extravagant ideas of the firſt European adventurers and ſchemers, and the villany of their managers; the tide does not effect this river very far up. In many places high up this river are found ſome extraordinary ſprings, which at a ſmall diſtance from the river on both ſides, ruſh or boil out of the earth, at once becoming navigable for boats, and from twenty five to forty yards wide, their courſe is ſeldom half a mile before they meet the river; their water is (contrary to that of the river) clear, ſo as to admit of the

ſeeing

ſeeing a ſmall piece of money at the depth of ten feet or more; they ſmell ſtrong of ſulphur, and whatever is thrown in them becomes ſoon incruſted with a white fungous matter; their taſte is bituminous, very diſagreeable, and they in my opinion cauſe the green cloudings we ſee on the ſurface of the water of this river, and make it putrid, and ſo unwholeſome as experience has taught us it is. I have no ſufficient ground to decide upon another circumſtance, which i am told, viz: That when rice is overflown with this river water, it kills it; above theſe ſprings the water of the river is good: This river is from one and a half to three miles wide, except at the houſe of Mr. Rolle, who has here made an odd attempt towards ſettling and making an eſtate in as complete a ſandy deſart as can be found; juſt above this, it is full of iſlands, exhibiting every where a very romantic appearance; there is a fine piece of water, called Dun's Lake, this is about nine miles from the river, eaſtward from this place, this empties itſelf by a ſtream into the river; another called the Doctor's Lake, is on the weſt ſide, about ſixty miles from the mouth, we ſee a variety of aquatic plants floating thereon. In my journey by land from the Bay of Tampe acroſs the Peninſula to St. Auguſtine, i croſſed twenty three miles from eaſt to weſt of miſerable barren ſand hills, the grain of the ſand is very ſmall and ferrugineous; theſe hills riſe a conſiderable height; on them is ſome growth of very ſmall pines, and a very humble kind of oak grows ſo thick, that with the addition of ſome wythes and other plants, to me utterly unknown, they render it abſolutely impenetrable. in this Ridge, which, as far as i can

learn,

learn, extends from North to South, between the rivers St. John and *Ocklaw-wawhaw*, for about an hundred and fifty miles. having no where any water in its whole extent, and i am told, that where we croſſed it, is its narroweſt place; my Indian guide had the precaution to carry water for ourſelves and horſes, which proved very ſerviceable as it was a very hot day, no growth of trees to ſhade us, and ſuch a burning ſand for the ſun to reflect on; i leave the reader to judge what we ſuffered, though it was but a ſhort diſtance over, both ourſelves and beaſts often experienced the neceſſity of carrying water; what muſt travelling over this place be in a hot day, where it is forty or more miles wide?

Before i leave St. John's River, i muſt not forget the river running from ſouth to north, called Pablo: This originates at a ſmall diſtance from St. Marks or North River, and empties into St. Johns at a ſmall diſtance from the mouth. The water of this river is good, ſo is the land on it; and it is thought that a communication with St. Mark's or the North River might be effected without much difficulty: this would open an inland navigation by canoes or boats, all the way from Carolina to near the Muſketo.

The river St. Mary although it is ſaid to originate in the *Ækanphanækin* ſwamp has a current of fine clear and wholeſome water ſupplied from the pine lands through which it flows, with many fine ſprings, runs, and rivulets of very clear water, Naſſau has alſo the ſame bleſſings, but doth not ſpring far diſtant from the ſea. On Amelia Iſland near the ſea, is a very good ſpring, which makes a fine ſtream for ſome miles, dividing the iſland al-

moſt

moſt into two; but below the ſpring its water is not commendable. On the beach betwen St. John's and St. Auguſtine, at or near a place called the Horſeguards, there are three good ſprings running into the ſea, and in every part where the beach is clear ſand, water is obtained by digging. About four miles north of St. Auguſtine riſes St. Sebaſtian's Creek, being a good freſh ſpring, it ſoon joins a creek in ſalt marſhes, and at a ſmall diſtance from town it becomes very large and deep; it empties into St. Anaſtaſia's Sound two miles ſouth of St. Auguſtine, making a Peninſula of this territory nearly in form of a creſcent; three miles farther ſouth is the mouth of the river St. Nicholas not very conſiderable; St. Cecilia in the ſame ſound, the North weſt, ſouth of the Matança and Penon; the Tomoke and Spruce Creek in the Muſketo Lagoon, and in ſhort every river and creek in the country except thoſe above named, are excellent wholeſome water; thus much i ſuppoſe will ſuffice as to the nature and quality of the water: All the rivers and ſprings in Weſt Florida are good.

The aborigines of the country come moſt naturally under our next conſideration, no one is ignorant, that the epithet of indians is given to thoſe people, though no doubt, the French name of ſavage is a much more proper one, as the manners of the red men are in every reſpect ſuch as betray that diſpoſition, and ſhew the ſavage thro' the beſt wrought veil of civilization; we might call them Americans, as the inhabitants of the old world are each diſtinguiſhed by a name expreſſive of, or relative to the quarters, from which they reſpectively originate, but this would be confounding

founding them with the other natives, as well white as black, which i think by no means reaſonable.

Oldmixon with all his failings is undoubtedly the only writer, who ſpeaks with truth and pertinence on this ſubject; all other Engliſh, French, and Spaniſh authors, which have fallen in my way (and they are not a few) have made of this ſtory a confuſed heap of nonſenſe and falſhood; i ſhall relate what i know and have found from real experience among four or five nations, and as i can vouch for the ſimilarity, that will be found among them, i believe my reader will be of my opinion, that from one end of America to the other, the red people are the ſame nation and draw their origin from a different ſource, than either Europeans, Chineſe, Negroes, Moors, Indians, or any other different ſpecies of the human genus, of which i think there are many ſpecies, as well as among moſt other animals, and that they are not a variety occaſioned by a commixture of any of the above ſpecies muſt alſo appear.

The above account will perhaps raiſe a conjecture that i believe the red men are not come from the weſtward out of the eaſt of Aſia; i do not believe it, i am firmly of opinion, that God created an original man and woman in this part of the globe, of different ſpecies from any in the other parts, and if per chance in the Ruſſian dominions, there are a people of ſimilar make and manners, is it not more natural to think they were colonies from the numerous nations on the continent of America, than to imagine, that from the ſmall comparative number of thoſe Ruſſian ſubjects, ſuch a vaſt country ſhould have been ſo numerouſly

merouſly peopled, and by what we know from the geographical diſcoveries that have been made within this century, it was undoubtedly eaſier for theſe people to have croſſed out of America into Aſia, than it was for the white people we find in Labrador to come from Lapland, yet who will deny that a Laplander and *Eſkimaux* are of the ſame original ſtock; add to this, that i have both ſacred and prophane hiſtory, beſides daily experience on my ſide to prove, that population, as well as all other things we find in nature, have always moved from the eaſtward, and ſtill continue ſo to do, why then ſhould we inſiſt on one part of this ſyſtem to move in a retrograde way, when for a further proof we find, by what we learn from the ſavages that have been far to the northweſt, that ſome white people anſwering to the Japoneſe, ſometimes come on that coaſt, but do not ſtay, nor have ever attempted colonization.

But alas! what a people do we find them, a people not only rude and uncultivated, but incapable of civilization: a people that would think themſelves degraded in the loweſt degree, were they to imitate us in any reſpect whatever, and that look down on us and all our manners with the higheſt contempt: and of whom experience has taught us, that on the leaſt opportunity they will return like the dog to his vomit. See there the boaſted, the admired ſtate of nature, in which theſe brutes enjoy and paſs their time here! How juſtly did the above named author exclaim:— "Let the learned ſay all the fine things that wit, "eloquence, and art can inſpire them with, of "the ſimplicity of pure nature, and its beauty "and innocence, the ſavage wretches of America

"are

" are an inſtance, that this innocence is a " downright ſtupidity, and this pretended beau- " ty a deformity, which puts man, the Lord of " the creation, on an equal foot (yea below) the " brute beaſts of the fields and foreſts.

In deſcribing a people an hiſtorian is obliged to ſpeak as they generally are; Dr. Blackwell, drawing conſequences from what he imagined a ſtate of nature to be (and what i believe it may have been) among moſt of the nations on the old continent, ſays:

" In the infancy of ſtates, men generally re- " ſemble the publick conſtitution, they have on- " ly that turn, which the rough culture of ac- " cidents, perhaps diſmal enough, through which " they have paſſed, could give them, they are ig- " norant and undeſigning, governed by fear, " and ſuperſtition its companion; there is a vaſt " void in their minds, they know not what will " happen, nor according to what tenor things " will take their courſe, every new object finds " them unprepared, and they gaze and ſtare like " infants taking in their firſt ideas of light."

How oppoſite is the ſavage, he is cunning and deſigning, knows no fear, nor has he any idea of religion to make him ſuperſtitious, on the contrary, the pretended conjurer who lives with him, runs a perpetual riſque of his life, he has no void in his mind, but is very deliberate and careful in his miſchief and cruelty; the ſtudy of what may occur in the next war or hunting ſeaſon always employs him, he can ever ſo plan his ſchemes, as to be certain of his future ſafety, and ſucceſs; without this laſt he neither undertakes nor riſks any thing; new objects are but a momentary ſur-

prize

prize to him, and his gazing and ſtaring always end in ſovereign contempt.

But to demonſtrate more clearly the contraſt between a ſavage and the people of the old continent, i beg leave to obſerve a few things, which have fallen under my inſpection and conſideration, which i apprehend will be thought pertinent to this purpoſe: A ſavage comes into this world with all the poſſibility of oppoſition to us; his mother on her approaching labour, retires from all company, aid, or aſſiſtance, into ſome loneſome wood, and there without perceptible pain or inconvenience, diſburthens herſelf, goes into cold water to cleanſe herſelf and her offspring, and returns to her daily vocation.

A ſavage has the moſt determined reſolution againſt labouring or tilling the ground, the ſlave his wife muſt do that, and a boy of ſeven or eight years old is aſhamed to be ſeen in his mother's company. No greater diſgrace can be thrown on a man than calling him by the odious epithet of Woman; what other nation do we find ſo abſolutely neglecting agriculture? What people are aſhamed to be ſeen eating or drinking in company with the fairer ſex?

Our women carry their children with their faces towards their own, a ſhe ſavage puts the back of hers towards her own back. When we make fire, we pile the fuel parrallel to each other; the ſavage puts his wood in a circular form, lights the central ends, and by the help of one of the ſticks, which he ſhoves always to the center, he keeps it in.

We make war in an open brave way, a ſavage by hiding himſelf ſurprizes; our priſoners are ſure

of life, the priſoner of a ſavage is ſure to die by cruel tortures. When we take a ſweat, we keep ourſelves warm with the utmoſt care; a ſavage with his open pores, plunges head long into the almoſt frozen river, or into a hole in the ice if quite frozen.

A ſavage man diſcharges his urine in a ſitting poſture, and a ſavage woman ſtanding, i need not tell how oppoſite this is to our common practice.

A ſavage never eats ſalted meats, nor boils any thing in ſalted water, though he has ſalt in abundance, but when he has been a long while from ſalt and then gets it, he will frequently eat a pound of it without any thing elſe. A ſavage either buries none of his dead, or if he does he puts the body in a ſitting or ſtandiug poſture; in a word, if they had always ſtudied to be in contraſt with us, they could not be more ſo, than nature has made them.

O Deus! homines et homines creaviſti.

All ſavages, with whom i have been acquainted, are, generally ſpeaking, well made, of a good ſtature, and neatly limbed; crooked, lame, or otherwiſe deformed perſons are ſeldom or never ſeen among theſe people; and if per chance we find a ſavage labouring under theſe misfortunes, we always find them accidental, never natural. Their colour reſembles that of cinnamon, with a copperiſh caſt; they are born white, but retain that hue a very ſhort time; their hair is lank, ſtrong, black, and long; they prevent the growth of what little beard nature has given them, by plucking it out by the roots; they never ſuffer any hair to grow on any part of the body except

the head, their eyes are black, lively and piercing, and they are bleſſed with an amazing faculty of diſcovering objects at a vaſt diſtance; their teeth are very good, and to the laſt they retain them, being never ſubject to the tooth ach; they are ſtrong and active, patient in hunger and the fatigue of hunting and journeying, but impatient and incapable of bearing labour, they are incredibly ſwift of foot; their diſcourſe is generally of war, hunting, or indecency; their women are handſome, well made, only wanting the colour and cleanlineſs of our ladies, to make them appear lovely in every eye; their ſtrength is great, and they labour hard, carrying very heavy burdens a great diſtance; they are laſcivious, and have no idea of chaſtity in a girl, but in married women, incontinence is ſeverely puniſhed; a ſavage never forgives that crime. They are capable of an attachment, rather than a friendſhip; addicted to lying in a high degree; their ſeeming candour and ſimplicity is an effect of diſſimulation; they know how to ſave appearances, and will always find ways to cover their knaviſh, thieving tricks; their notions of faith and honour are ſuch as make them violate their word of promiſe, even when they are in treaty, unleſs compelled to be true by fear or force. They are brutal and have not the moſt diſtant idea of decorum; without taſte they are terrible drunkards, in which laſt ſtate, there is no villany nor crime, they will not commit, and when they recover their ſenſes, throw the blame on the liquor, holding themſelves entirely excuſed; no religion of any kind can we trace among them. Poſſeſſed of indifference and want of ſentiment, they drag themſelves through

a kind of life, which would make us paſs our days very irkſomely, and tire us in a ſhort time with the diſagreeable ſimilitude of our hours; in a word, they have nothing in their way of life to tempt a man of the leaſt reflection, to envy them their miſerable ſtate of nature.

But with all theſe bad qualities, they have one virtue, which is hoſpitality, and this they carry to exceſs; a ſavage will ſhare his laſt ounce of meat with a viſitant ſtranger. What travellers have related of their giving their daughters to tranſient perſons, is not true, and it is not till after ſome acquaintance, that they will give a white man, what they call a wife, unleſs he chooſes an abandoned proſtitute, which are here to be found as well as elſewhere. Among the nations, which i have frequented, a young ſtranger (led away by the notion of this traveller's ſtory) that would attempt, on his firſt acquaintance, to aſk a man for his daughter, might pay dear for it. The Chactaws, who have a greater idea of a *meum* and *tuum* than any of their neighbours, are not ſo hoſpitable as they; but although they will on this principle require pay for even the leaſt morſel, they ſet before one, yet the ſame idea of property has taken off much of their ſavage diſpoſitions in many other caſes.

I cannot think it foreign to my ſubject to mention, before i proceed to the particular deſcription of each nation, ſomething farther about the origin of the native Americans: Great pains have been taken to prove theſe people deſcended from the *Phænicians*; among others i find an anonimous Gentleman, who gravely tells us, that *Phænicians* or *Erythreans* in Greek, carry the ſame

ſenſe

ſenſe as *Eſau* or *Edom* in Hebrew, both meaning red, hence that nation was red, ſo are the ſavages, ergo, they are the ſame people; as ridiculous as this argument is, the pains taken to ſhew that the extenſive navigation of the *Phænicians* amounts to a proof of their having croſſed the Atlantic to America, is no leſs void of ſenſe, although far fetched annotations are made uſe of to prove their naval power, by *Cambyſes* being obliged to renounce his deſign on *Carthage*, by reaſon of the *Phænicians* refuſing to put to ſea, yet neither that, nor the proof of their having built *Leptis*, *Utica*, *Hippo*, *Adrumetum*, on the African continent, nor *Calis*, and *Tarteſſus* in Europe, or their colonizations in *Iberia*, and *Lybia*, nor all the power aſcribed to them by *Curtius*, ſeems in the leaſt to indicate any tranſit to this weſtern world.

Equally abſurd are the reveries of *Comtæus*, of thoſe who conſtrue the iſland diſcovered by the Phænicians (which *Diodorus Siculus* mentions L. 6 C. 7, and the paſſages of *Pliny* L. 5 C. 1 and *Pomponius Mela* L. 1 C. 4) likewiſe the common wealth of the alegorical dialogue between *Midas* and *Silenus* by *Theopompus*, and the quotation of *Pauſanias* concerning the diſcovery of the *Satyrides* by *Euphemius* of *Caria*) into America; alſo *Boſſu* father *Laffiteau*, *du Pratz*, and others, as the refutation of theſe would be unintereſting and therefore tedious, i ſhall content myſelf with having only mentioned them, and proceed to take ſome notice of the more general hypotheſis; *that the ſavages are the diſperſions of the ten loſt tribes of Iſrael.*

We are told, that the Americans agree in many of their cuſtoms with the Jews; but in which?

We

We ſee not the ſmalleſt ſimilarity in any of their ways, unleſs the ſeperation of women among the Chicaſaws, at the time of their *Catamenia*; but not to urge how naturally this faſhion might point itſelf out, and its being confined to one ſmall tribe only, let us argue a little on the jewiſh grand and characteriſtic ceremony of circumciſion, of which the boldeſt genealogiſt in this way, cannot find any the leaſt mark, nor traces among thoſe people. How have the jews neglected to introduce this ſign of the covenant here, when they have made it obtain among ſo many of the Eaſterns where they lived even as ſlaves and exiles; and they always thought their ſalvation dependent thereon? How many tribes in Africa ſtill retain that cuſtom, though without any other of the Iſralitiſh rites, which they have forgot? but where can we diſcover even the moſt diſtant appearance of this ceremony in America?

Juſt ſo is it with that pretended migration to *Aſſareth*, as mentioned in the fourth book of *Eſdras*, in the thirteenth chapter; but without inſiſting on the apocryphal quality of this evidence, i would only aſk, why this *Aſſareth* ſhould be more America, than any other far diſtant country? And how they found their way by the *Euphrates* to this continent? Further it is evident, that *St. Jerome* (who flouriſhed under *Theodoſius* in the latter end of the fourth century, lived in *Aſia*, and held a cloſe correſpondence with the Jews, for the ſake of learning their language) plainly tells us in his *Ezech*: L. 5, and *Jerem*: L. 6, that thoſe very ten tribes, were then groaning under the ſevere yoke of ſlavery, in the

cities

cities of *Media* and *Perſia*; this i judge to be proof enough to invalidate this journey to *Aſſareth*, and rank it along with the fables of the loſs of the whole law, the confinement of ſouls in ſubterraneous apartments, and with the childiſh tales of *Behemoth* and *Leviathan* in the ſame fourth book of *Eſdras*.

Yet, as a farther proof of the falſhood of this American expedition, by the ten tribes of *Iſrael*, i would beg leave to aſk my readers, whether they can imagine, that ſo prodigious a migration could poſſibly happen at a time of the moſt deſperate wars, and deſolations in the very countries through which they muſt neceſſarily paſs, for it is evident, that ſince *St. Jérome*'s time, although the *Perſians* had again regained their empire, yet for ſeveral centuries together, they were conſtantly warring with the *Romans*, *Indians*, and other Eaſtern nations, and laſtly with the *Saracens*. 'Till the famous Tartarian expedition under *Zengis Chan*, this whole country ſwam in the blood of its natives, and before this period, the Grecian wars, the conqueſts of *Alexander*, with the diviſions of his captains at his death, furniſhed as little opportunity for this journey, which alſo muſt have been ſtrangely overlooked, by ſuch a number of hiſtorians of credit, as flouriſhed during the above ſpace of time. I could with as much force of argument invalidate *Emanuel de Moras* (a Spaniard;) who, to prove that America is peopled from *Carthage*, and by the Jews, makes numerous far fetched compariſons, of the manners of theſe nations and the *Brazilians*; nor can i think, that after this, any of the favourers of this Jewiſh anceſtry will inſiſt, that the natives

of

of America are deſcended from the other two tribes, ſince they were not only not allowed to ſee the land of their fathers, even in quality of travellers, but on pain of death, were they forbid to aſſemble in large companies, which it was however neceſſary they ſhould do for ſuch a migration; but i am afraid my reader, as well as myſelf, is by this time tired of ſo much argumentation againſt ſo ſilly an Hypotheſis.

No leſs idle is the argument uſed by Grotius concerning the Mexicans telling the Spaniards, that they came out of the North, where he thinks to find the Norwegian deſcent in the city *Norumbega*, but who can find in North America, traces of any ancient city at all? That the Americans divide their time by nights (or ſleeps, as they ſtile them) is true, alſo their dipping new born infants in cold water, their going naked, and their eating ſeparate from the women, with many other cuſtoms of the ſavages, ſimilar to the ancient manners of the Germans, but this only proves to me, that in the times of *Tacitus* and the other *Roman* hiſtorians, the *Teutonick* nations were in as ſavage a ſtate of nature, as we now ſee the Americans; a ſameneſs in colour, and ſtature, as well as, or rather than ſimilarity of Languages is to me a requiſite proof, and for that reaſon i believe, that the *Eſkimaux* came from *Lapland*, but by what accident, we are ignorant of, and ſo we might gueſs at ſome eventual paſſage of the red ſavages, were we able to trace any ſimilarity between them and any nation of the old world, but we ſee none; yet all the iſlands of America, even *New Zealand*, are peopled by the ſame race as this vaſt continent; therefore i will rather ſuppoſe,

poſe, that the ſavages, have ſent out colonies, than that they are a colony from any other part of the earth. The ſame Gentleman endeavours to fetch the *Peruvians* from *China*, but with as little foundation in truth. Mr. Powell's ſtory of Maddock the Welſhman's voyage, cannot be thought fit, to aſcribe a Welſh origin to the ſavages, becauſe they could by no means either grow to ſuch numbers, nor degenerate ſo much in colour, as they muſt have done, in two centuries; yet even this has been made uſe of by a certain Dutch writer, whoſe name i do not now recollect; and how unluckily does *Boſſu* here bring forth the black headed *Pinguin*, to prove that the Welſh word *Pen-gwin*, was given to this bird for a name, by Maddock's followers, becauſe *Pen* is head, and *gwyn* is white, and Mr. Foſter in his note on that paſſage, is as unlucky in ſaying *Penguin* is Spaniſh for a fat bird.

I find a more powerful argument uſed by thoſe who bring the ſavages from *Tartary*; becauſe i do not at all doubt, from my judgment of geography, that *America* joins *Aſia*; but the expedition of *Hoccota*, the ſon of *Canguiſta*, firſt King of the Tartars, as mentioned by *Michalon Lituanus*, in his *Ennead* 9, L. 6, which has likewiſe been conſtrued to have reached America, is alſo too late to allow them time to become ſo numerous a people; becauſe this man lived about the year 1240; but although i believe a poſſibility of the paſſage by land, yet i cannot find, that there is any ſimilarity in the perſons of the North Eaſtern Tarters. and the American ſavages, and much leſs in their manners; and if there is between thoſe of *Kamſchatka* and America, i ſtill

think, that the firſt are more naturally to be ſuppoſed a ſmall colony from the latter, than that the latter prodigious numerous people are ſprung from ſo ſmall a tribe as the *Kamſchatkans*; every one of the red men over the whole continent, and thoſe who ſtill remain in a few of the iſlands, is exactly ſimilar in perſon to his neighbour, and their numbers are to this day vaſtly great, notwithſtanding the cruel depredations of the ſeveral European nations,

The contemptible light, in which *Boſſu* endeavours to place the number of the ſavages, is well confuted by Mr. Hutchin's account of the nations near our ſettlements, who having mutually deſtroyed each other, and been deſtroyed by the ſword, and liquid fire of the Europeans, at a ſhocking rate, yet amount by that Gentleman's moderate calculation, even at this day, to near three hundred thouſand ſouls; therefore it is not their ſmall number, but the vaſt extent of this continent, that cauſes their nomadic life.

But to treat more particularly againſt this notion, of the American deſcent from the Tartars, who can ſuppoſe that their darling animal, as well for food, labour, and war, as other uſes, i mean the horſe, ſhould not have been brought along with the colony? Who knows not, that the Tartars uſe moſt, and can leaſt ſpare this noble creature? Does not all their martial power conſiſt in horſemen? Does not their very maintenance depend on horſes? Have we not ſufficient proof, that many Tartarian Lords keep hundreds of horſes, and even ſtable them? None are ſo poor as not to have two or three; when they ſhift their abode, do not horſes carry

their

their tents and proviſions? When all other food fails them, garlick and mare's milk is their reſource; the very blood out of the veins of theſe animals ſupplies the place of an agreeable drink; what ſtream ſo rapid which they do not croſs on their horſes backs, or by holding their manes, and guiding them with a twig, while they ſwim at their ſide? making a ſmall raft of their baggage, they tie it to the tail, and thus croſs every river in their way; a horſe's ſkin makes a boat to croſs a very wide river, lake, or even an arm of the ſea; the ſuppoſed narrow diviſion between Aſia and America, near Cape *Tchukſhi*, could then by no means, be an obſtacle to the tranſportation of theſe animals; the diviſion of the ſeveral places, named by *Boſſu*, through earthquakes, is abſurdly introduced, to prove that this migration happened before ſuch a convulſion of nature, which prevented the return of any of theſe emigrants. A Tartarian army appears larger than it is, on account of each man having two or three horſes; and notwithſtanding their horſes die by the ſword, or are killed for food, yet many thouſands are yearly delivered to *Ruſſia*, by the European Tartars only; this much premiſed, how had the ſavages no horſes on the arrival of the Spaniards? Had the Tartars inhabited a country near America, the very horſes would have increaſed ſo as to come over to this continent; how many inſtances do we find even among the ſettled provinces of America, of horſes going wild! but the greateſt proof, that this muſt have infallibly happened, is to be found in South America, where now many millions are found wild, in the great plains ſouth of Brazil,

eſpecially

eſpecially near *Rio de la Plata*; yet theſe take their origin from the Northern America, and have croſſed vaſt mountains; how came it then, that a dozen or two of horſemen routed myriads of Americans? only one objection remains to be confuted; there may be an arm of the ſea between Aſia and America, and this colony came by water; but can it even then be ſuppoſed, that theſe people would have forgot their favoutite horſes? or will any ſay that if the horſes could come by land, yet every climate does not maintain them; one ſummer would ſuffice for the journey: A horſe when travelling alone, is experienced to go very faſt forward on his journey, and we learn alſo from the ſame great teacher (experience) that thouſands of horſes in North America, even breeding mares, live in the woods in deep ſnows, through hard winters, without human aſſiſtance; but no, theſe Tartars could not bring horſes, nor other uſeful animals, and yet a colony of Panthers, Lynxes, Wolves, Foxes, Otters, and other deſtructive animals muſt be ſuppoſed to have found their way as well as theſe emigrants. Here language is tortured into a proof; a certain *Abraham a Mylis* has found out, that in the empire of *Cathay*, which lays neareſt America, they ſpeak the *Teutonic* dialect, and this ſame empire being divided, into ſeven provinces, the Eaſtermoſt is called *Tendhuk*, very like to *het eynde des hoeks*, or the end of the point, and *Anyan* is very like, *Aangang*, or paſſage (a paſſage to be ſure out of Tartary, to America;) again beyond *Anyan*, is the vaſt country of *Bergo*, this certainly is very much like *Bergen*, or ſheltering, becauſe the *Scythians* leaving their native country, ſhel-

tered

tered themſelves here; fine Etymology! noble Geography! *(riſum teneatis amici!)*

The paſſage from Aſia to America, is by no means proved by the pretended Elephants bones found in the ſwamp near Ohio, ſince by later obſervations, and examinations of the bones, by men of more knowledge than the meer vulgar, they appear never to have belonged to elephants, but more probably are the remains of ſome *Hippopotami*, eſpecially as near that river, the Indians, often at this day, diſcover large foot ſteps, and hear great bellowings, both proceeding from animals they never ſee themſelves.

I think if Mr. *Boſſu* had obliged us with the knowledge of the particular nation that calls the *Ginſeng*,* *Garidoguen*, he would have thrown more light on his far fetched notion of the parallel between the Tartars and Savages; and ſince he has himſelf invalidated the pretended etymology, i would beg leave to deal with his ſimilar ſignifications in the ſame manner, for why ſhould not the ſame idea ſtrike *Boſſus's* nation and the *Mantcheoux* Tartars upon ſight of the *Ginſeng*, and make both compare it to men's thighs? But as but one nation among ſo many has accepted this idea, it cannot be allowed, even as the moſt diſtant proof; the fable of the *Eſcaaniba* by Boſſu alſo, is too ridiculous and abſurd to merit confutation.

Nothing now remains, but a few words about the migration of the *Chineſe* into *Peru*, from whence ſome ſuppoſe America is peopled, but how different the colour and figure of the people! and where do we find any *Chineſe* fineſſe among the ſavages? beſides, what Geographer

* Panax Quinquefolium

does

does not know that the *Chineſe* might more eaſily, have come over to the eaſtern ſhore of America, acroſs the Atlantic, than over the wilder, wider, and more ſtormy South Sea, to land on *Perus's* or *Chilis's* unhoſpitable ſhore, where our large European veſſels can ſcarcely live, much leſs a *Chineſe* junk; nor did the *Peruvians* know any thing of large Veſſels till the arrival of the Spaniards; ſtrange indeed, that their naval knowledge, and mother country, ſhould be thus forgotten! the more ſo, as it is much eaſier, to go from America to *China*, than the contrary, by reaſon of the conſtant eaſterly winds reigning here, which alſo make it more improbable that the *Chineſe* veſſels came here by chance, or ſtreſs of weather; nor could they in that caſe, but by chance, be provided with the proviſions neceſſary for ſo long a voyage.

Methinks i hear ſome critical perſon ſay, whence then came the ſavages? That indeed, is a difficult queſtion to anſwer; it is eaſier to confute the different opinions, than to ſay any thing with certainty on this head, more eſpecially as theſe people want all manner of record; yet a tolerable gueſs may be made to extricate us out of this difficult labyrinth.

Without doubt *Moſes*'s account of the Creation is true, but why ſhould this Hiſtorian's books, in this one thing, be taken ſo univerſally, when he evidently has confined himſelf to a kind of chronicle concerning one ſmall part of the earth, and in this to one nation only; this account therefore muſt be underſtood with the ſame limitation as many others in holy writ are generally allowed to be; i think therefore that (as mentioned

oned before) we do not at all derogate from God's greatneſs, nor in any ways diſhonour the ſacred evidence given us by his ſervants, when we think, that there were as many *Adams* and *Eves* (every body knows theſe names to have an allegorical ſenſe) as we find different ſpecies of the human genus; is this not a more natural way, agreeing more with the proceedings of a God of order, than the ſilly ſuppoſitions that the variety is an effect of chance, much leſs a conſequence of curſes? the more ſo, as neither has any foundation in God's holy word; why muſt we think that the curſes of a head of a family, ſhould effect each race with a peculiar ſet of features, and ſhape of body? Or one tribe with a red, a ſecond with a ſallow, a third with a yellow, and a fourth with a black colour, &c? Beſides we read of but one curſe of this kind; they are different ſpecies then. Anatomy has taught us, that the bone of a Negroe's ſkull, is always black, that beſides the *Tunics* of which our ſkins are compoſed, they have an additional one, conſiſting of numerous veſicles, filled wish a black ink-like humour; ſee here then two characteriſticks, beſides the blackneſs of the ſkin, whereby this ſable race is diſtinguiſhed; may not experience teach us, that when the other ſpecies are more carefully examined, they will all be found to have ſome ſuch peculiar character of diſtinction? Why then ſhall we involve ourſelves into numberleſs, needleſs difficulties about the origin of theſe ſo ſingular people, ſo very different from all other tribes on the globe, yet ſo very ſimilar to each other: Throughout their own continent their wild manners are univerſally

alike;

alike; their languages only differ; why then can we not take the more eaſy way in ſaying, God has created an original pair here as well as elſewhere: Is not this opinion ſupported by our finding numberleſs other kinds of the animal kingdom on this continent peculiar to itſelf; where (beſides in America) do we find the *Bos Americanus?* Where the *Paca*, and *Vecunha* (both American ſheep?) where the *Urſus Luſcus* or racoon, the *Armadillo*, the *Agouti*, the *Lacerta Americana*, called *Leguana?* the *Ignavo* (an animal called the American Sloth?) where the ſame kind of *Simiæ*, and the *Veſpertilio Cynocephalus*? where the *Warri* or the *Pecairi* (two ſpecies of the *Sus*?) The many kinds of *Myrmecophaga*, the *Mus Marſupialis*, *Mus Scalopes*, *Mus Paluſtris hiſpidus*, of the ſame kind, as thoſe in America? Where again the *Struthio Americanus*, or the immenſe variety of the *Pſittacus*, peculiar to America? Where the *Toucan*, the *Phænicopteros* and *Arquato*, with the red *Platea*? Where the beautiful wood duck, and the kinds of *Phaſianus* called *Quama* and *Curaſoa*? Where the little *Melliſuga*, or the beautiful, and remarkable aquatic *Muſcophagus*, called a ſun bird? and many more of the quadruped and winged tribes, large and ſmall, too tedious to enumerate? Where again the rattle Snake, and others of the reptile kind? Even among Fiſhes, the ſame obſervation holds; has *Pliny* among all his fabulous animals, deſcribed any like theſe really exiſting ones?

Again, whence was America ſtocked with men in our likeneſs? Where were the oxen, the horſes, the ſwine, dogs, cats, or even rats? or

where

where were our poultry to be found on this continent? Yet we ſee how immenſely they have multiplied ſince their firſt importation, ſo that the air and food are certainly well adapted to them; a wiſe effect of providence, which knew this quarter muſt one day become inhabited by animals not originally created in it.

What can now be ſaid againſt this my argument for a ſeparate origin of the ſavages? Nothing that will amount to an abſolute proof of the contrary. But a difficulty ariſes as to the effect of the deluge; to remove which i muſt obſerve, that America, even in its mountains, retains very few if any of the ſo often quoted marks of this inundation; on the contrary, it is a ſmooth regularly riſing country; and i think, that to believe the flood ſo far partial, as to have reached the only lands of *Egypt*, *Paleſtine*, *Armenia*, and *Greece*, is by no means an abſurd opinion, nor inconſiſtent with the deſtruction of the race of men of which *Moſes* treats, nor with the water being fifteen cubits above the higheſt hill then known, ſuppoſed to be *Arrarat*; and had it been abſolutely univerſal, yet the *Andes*, *Cordileras*, *Aceytas*, and *Santa Martha*, are many hundred cubits higher and conſequently, might remain a vaſt way dry; but grant the deluge univerſal, who will diſpute with me, that the omnipotent Lord of the univerſe could create a red man after his own image, ſuffer him to fall as well as a white man, deſtroy his poſterity except a few, and find a way to ſave a remnant of man and beaſt, and then for reaſons, into which we have no right to enter, any more than the clay has to contend with the potter, leave this race without

extending his tender mercies to them, as he did to us, not even ſending his apoſtles into this quarter of the world; and when the chriſtians, ſo called, arrived here firſt, to ſuffer the pretended Miſſionaries to preach a falſe, abſurd doctrine to thoſe wretches, nay, even to this day to harden their hearts againſt the light drawn from under a buſhel, and placed conſpicuouſly on a candleſtick.

However among none of the ſavages do we find any tradition of ſuch a flood, except among ſome ſouthern nations, who tell of ſix perſons creeping out of a hole, whereby the earth was peopled; theſe have been conſtrued into *Noah*'s ſons and their wives.

The Chactaws have told me of a hole between their nation and the Chicaſaws, out of which their whole very numerous nation walked forth at once, without ſo much as warning any neighbours; i cannot find any relation between this and a deluge: On the *Iſthmus* of *Darien* i have indeed been warned by the ſavages of an approaching flood on a certain day, and when i had ſtayed till then and ſaw the event to be nothing, i ridiculed them about it; and they told me that a great while ago they had ſuch an inundation, and that their *Sukies* or conjurors, had foretold a ſimilar one now, but had proved themſelves lyars; this is the only hint i could ever trace of any notion of a great flood; and i leave my reader to judge of the weakneſs or force of this evidence, and of the juſtneſs of the opinion advanced, which i offer only becauſe i think that truth ſhould be the object of man's enquiries, and that God has given us the only advantage we

have over brutes, in order to ſpur us on to enquiries into the myſteries of nature.

I ſhall now treat of the four moſt noted nations connected with Florida in particular, beginning with the Chicaſaws, they being (although a ſmall tribe) accounted the mother nation on this part of the continent, and their language, univerſally adopted by moſt, if not all the weſtern nations. This is the moſt fierce, cruel, inſolent, and haughty people, among the ſouthern nations; they are very intrepid in the wars with their Meridional neighbours, and the French under Meſſrs. *Artaguette* and *Bienville*, in 1736 experienced their valour (when aided by a few Engliſhmen of tried courage) and in 1752, and 1753, Meſſrs. *Benoiſt* and *Reggio* likewiſe found them ſucceſsful to their coſt; but with the northern nations it ſtands otherways; the *Kikapoos*, *Piancashas* and others are their terror; notwithſtanding their boaſt of ſcalps from the northward, it has appeared that, except ſome private murders among nations, who think the inſult to come from ſome other quarter, and ſome ſlaves and ſcalps obtained from the daſtardly *Chigtagiks*, they have really not been able ſo much as to find the *Kikapoos*, *Piancasha*, *Wyogtani*, *Shogteys*, *Muſquakey*, *Otogami* towns; this appeared clearly while i was in the Chicaſaw nation in the winter of 1771 and 1772, when one Mr. James (who had been a priſoner with the *Kikapoos*, for the ſpace of three years, and had found means to eſcape from them arrived there, and told, that in all that time never one of the Chicaſaws appeared, or did miſchief among theſe nations, nor could he learn they ever did; yet it is evident that theſe com-

to the very Chicaſaw towns to commit depredations, as well as in their hunting grounds, where the Chicaſaws always take care to fortify themſelves.

It is alſo obſervable, that to the north of their towns they never venture any plantations, and to the ſouthward they have many; nay they ſcarcely venture to get fire wood north of their habitation; in ſhort they have never ſhewn their bravery but againſt the Chactaws and Creeks, with the French their allies; the Northerns have always been their maſters, and the *Arkanſas* and *Catawbas* their match; the *Cherokees* have generally had the worſt of the wars between them; they have always been ſtaunch allies to the Engliſh, but i think there is no very great dependance to be had on them now, for i can (not without reaſon) affirm, that that alliance was all owing to the French being their irreconcilable, and mortal enemies; now theſe are out of the way, little reliance is to be had on them; and in the winter of 1771 and 1772, the traders were under daily apprehenſions of a quarrel. It is true that thoſe monſters in human form, the very ſcum and out caſt of the earth, are always more prone to ſavage barbarity than the ſavages themſelves; but it is no leſs true, that the traders were of as diſſolute a life, and of as profligate manners, with as great an inclination for deceit and over reaching during the French time, as they are now; but then the policy of theſe ſavages curbed their thoughts of revenge; whereas now they frequently dare to vent threats of a diſagreeable nature, which are the more dangerous becauſe thoſe ſavage politicians are always very much upon their guard when they

they are treating with our men in office, how they behave themſelves in this reſpect, well knowing that the ancient fame of their faithful alliance is ſufficiently rooted in the hearts of the open minded Engliſh, to enable them to impoſe on their credulity.

As an inſtance of Chicaſaw honour or faith, which is indeed equal to that of any nation of American ſavages whatever; i would mention the tryal that has been made for concluding an union between the *Arkanſas*, *Quappas*, or *Kappas*, and the Chicaſaws; the firſt attempted at leaſt an alliance with the latter ſo long ago as 1764, but no kind of ſolemn embaſſy, or deputation was employed for the effecting this before the ſummer 1771, and then at this meeting the inſolence of the Chicaſaws run ſo high, as to inſult one of the *Quapa* deputies by calling him a woman, and ſpitting rum in his face, which was put up with; but the *Arkanſas* never have made an attempt to finiſh the treaty ſince, and i dare venture to foretell, that ſuch an union would by no means be for our good, let it happen when it may.

The morals of this nation are more corrupt than thoſe of any of their neighbours; the Chactaws are ſaid to be thieves, but i can aſſure the reader that the Chicaſaws are a thouſand times more ſo; i have had ample proof of it by loſing incomparably more in one day, at the Chicaſaw town than i did in two months going through ſeventy four Chactaw towns, notwithſtanding i had been warned, and was on my guard againſt the Chicaſaws; my razors and a caſe of inſtruments, and other trifles of no real uſe to them, beſides every horſe i had with me, vaniſhed in one day

among

among theſe deceitful people. Their diſcourſe is really intolerable, nothing but filth is heard from them; the vanity of being accounted great hunters and warriors has the better of every conſideration, and rather than condeſcend to cultivate the earth (which they think beneath them) they will ſit and toy with their women; or if they ſend them to labour, they play on an aukward kind of flute made of a cane, lolling thus their time away with great indifference, which obliges them yearly to apply for corn and pulſe to the Chactaws.

They live nearly in the center of a very large and ſomewhat uneven ſavannah, of a diameter of above three miles; this ſavannah at all times has but a barren look, the earth is very Nitrous, and the ſavages get their water out of holes or wells dug near the town; in any drought the ground will gape infiſſures of about ſix or ſeven inches wide, and again, two or three days rain will cauſe an inundation; the water is always nitrous, and this field abounds, with flint, marl, and thoſe kinds of anomilous foſſils miſtaken for oyſter ſhells, which cannot be burnt into lime; yet this produces a graſs of which cattle are ſo fond as to leave the richeſt cane brakes for it; and notwithſtanding the ſoil appears barren and burnt up, they thrive to admiration; it alſo affords a vaſt, or even immenſe ſtore of the ſalubrious *Fragaria*, vulgarly known by the name of wood ſtrawberry.

They have in this field what might be called one town, or rather an aſſemblage of hutts, of the length of about one mile and a half, and very narrow and irregular; this however they

divide

divide into ſeven, by the names of *Melattaw* (i. e.) hat and feather, *Chatelaw* (i. e.) copper town, *Chukafalaya* (i. e.) long town, *Hikihaw* (i. e.) ſtand ſtill, *Chucaliſſa* (i. e.) great town, *Tuckahaw* (i. e.) a certain weed, and *Aſhuck hooma* (i. e.) red graſs; this was formerly incloſed in paliſadoes, and thus well fortified againſt the attacks of ſmall arms, but now it lays open; a ſecond *Artaguette*, a little more prudent than the firſt, would now find them an eaſy prey.

The neareſt running water, is about one mile and a half off, to the ſouth of the town, in the edge of the field, but it is of no note; the next is four miles off; and at high times, canoes might come up here out of the river *Tombechbé*; this place is a ford, which often proves difficult, and on this account is called *Nahoola Inalchubba* (i. e.) the white mens hard labour.

Horſes and cattle thrive well in this nation, their breed of the former was once famous, being deſcended from ſome Arabian horſes brought from Spain to Mexico, but of late they have ſo mixed them with meaner kinds, as to cauſe them to degenerate much.

The traders who for fear of cauſing jealouſy by their diſcourſe have formed nick names for all the ſavage nations, have called theſe by the whimſical name of the breed; as cunningly ſuſpicious as the ſavages are, yet i never found that any of them ever took notice of this diſtinction.

One remarkable thing i cannot omit of this nation: There were in 1771, only two real original Chicaſaws left; one of them, who goes by the name of *North Weſt*, ſcruples not to tell them all very often, that they are of a ſlave race.

Their

Their grand Chief is called *Opaya Mataha*, and it is ſaid he has killed his man upwards of forty times, for which great feats he has been raiſed to this nominal dignity, which by all ſavages is as much regarded, as among us a titular nobleman would be if he ſhould be obliged to be a journeyman taylor for his maintenance.

Theſe ſavages are the only ones i ever heard of who make their females obſerve a ſeparation at the time of their *Menſes* (ſome ancient almoſt extirpated tribes to the northward only excepted, and theſe uſed to avoid their own dwelling houſes) the women then retire into a ſmall hut ſet apart for that purpoſe, of which there are from two to ſix round each habitation, and by them called moon houſes.

The whole tribe are remarkably ſtrong made fellows, but few of their women have regular features, or deſerve to be called handſome; theſe labour vaſtly hard, either in the field for cultivation of corn, or fetching nuts, fire wood and water, which they chiefly carry on their backs; the two firſt articles generally two or three miles, and the laſt often a mile, their burthens would amaze a ſtranger, being rather fit for aſſes than women to carry.

This nation is the moſt imperious in their carriage towards their women, of any i have met with; they are very jealous of their wives, and adultery in them is puniſhed by the loſs of the tip of the noſe, which they ſometimes cut, but more generally bite off, but this does not deter them, for they are a very ſalacious race, and the mark is pretty general. They are all good ſwimmers, notwithſtanding they live ſo far from waters, but

they

they learn their children to ſwim in clay holes, that are filled in wet ſeaſons by rain.

They are the moſt expert of any perhaps in America in tracking what they are in purſuit of, and they will follow their flying enemy, on a long gallop, over any kind of ground without miſtaking.

Since i am on this ſubject, i cannot forbear taking notice of one thing related by many writers on America; which is the knowledge the ſavages have by the track of what kind of people they purſue; this is very true, and this ſagacious particular deſerved admiration, but the wonder muſt ceaſe when i tell my reader, that i have found in it much of a juggle, for inſtead of knowing it by the foot ſteps (which they pretend to meaſure very ceremoniouſly with their hands) they know it by the ſtrokes of the hatchets in the trees and branches as they go along, which no two ſavage nations agree in, be it in the height from the ground, or in the ſlope of the cut; they can alſo diſtinguiſh the different ways of making camps and fires; for inſtance; a Chactaw war camp is circular, with a fire in the center, and each man has a crutched branch at his head to hang his powder and ſhot upon, and to ſet his gun againſt, and the feet of all to the fire; a Cherokee war camp is a long line of fire, againſt which they alſo lay their feet; a Chactaw makes his camp in travelling in form of a ſugar loaf; a Chicaſaw makes it in form of our arbours; a Creek like to our ſheds, or piazzas, to a timber houſe; in this manner every nation has ſome diſtinguiſhing way.

The Chicaſaws are eſteemed good hunters, they

have extenſive hunting grounds, and make excellent uſe of them; they extend them to the branch of the *Ohio*, called *Tanaſſé*, *Hogoheechee* or *Cherokee* river, and claim to the mouth of the *Ohio*, but this ground they frequent with great caution, only in the depth of winter when their northern enemies are cloſe at home; they are often ſurpriſed on the rivers *Margot* and *Yaſoo*, but below the *Yaſoo* as far eaſt as the eaſtern branches of *Tombechbè*, and as low as *Oka Tibehaw*, they hunt ſafely; this laſt they regard as their boundary with the Chactaws, but theſe two nations are by no means jealous of each other in this reſpect, and hunt in each others grounds without lett or hindrance from either ſide; although their country abounds in beaver, they kill none, leaving that to the white men; they think this kind of hunting beneath them, ſaying any body can kill beaver, but men only deer; this is exactly the reverſe of a northern Indian; they hunt like all their neighbours with the ſkin and frontal bone of a deer's head, dried and ſtretched on elaſtic chips; the horns they ſcoup out very curiouſly, employing ſo much patience on this, that ſuch a head and antlers often do not exceed ten or twelve ounces; they fix this on the left hand, and imitating the motions of the deer in ſight, they decoy them within ſure ſhot. I cannot forbear to mention a merry accident on this occaſion; a Chactaw Indian, who was hunting with one of theſe decoys on his fiſt, ſaw a deer, and thinking to bring it to him, imitated the deer's motions of feeding and looking round in a very natural way, another ſavage within ſhot, miſtaking the head for a real one, ſhot the ball through it, ſcarcely miſſing

the

the fingers of the firſt; the affair ended in fifty cuffs, but was no farther reſented.

Their habitations at home conſiſt of three buildings, a ſummer houſe, a corn houſe, and a winter houſe, called a hot houſe; the two firſt are oblong ſquares, the latter is circular, they have no chimnies but let the ſmoke find its way out through a hole at the top in their dwelling houſes, but in the hot houſes, where it can; in theſe they make large wood fires, on the middle of the floor, which being by evening all coals, they enter in, and ſleep on benches made round the inſide of the building; this would ſtifle any one not uſed to it, and be it never ſo ſharp a morning, they come out ſweating and naked as ſoon as it is day; i believe this proceeding kills numbers of them, as in lattitude 35 00, where they live, it is often very cold; they alſo uſe for an univerſal cure of all diſeaſes, exceſſive ſweating in theſe hot houſes, and then with their pores open jump into a hole of cold water, this treatment of thoſe that had the ſmall pox killed numbers; theſe hot houſes of a morning emitting ſmoke through every crevice, ſeem to a ſtranger to be all on fire on the inſide.

Their common food is the *zea* or the Indian corn, of which they make meal, and boil it; they alſo parch it, and then pound it; thus taking it on their journey, they mix it with cold water, and will travel a great way without any other food; they begin to have the knowledge of keeping cattle; but at preſent they enjoy little or no freſh meats while at home, but in the hunting ſeaſon in the woods, it is almoſt the only food they make uſe of; they have alſo a way of dry-

ing

ing and pounding their corn, before it comes to maturity; this they call *Boota Copaſſa* (i. e.) cold flour; this, in ſmall quantities, thrown into cold water, boils and ſwells as much as common meal boiled over a fire; it is hearty food, and being ſweet, they are fond of it; but as the proceſs for making it is troubleſome, their lazineſs ſeldom allows them to have it; they likewiſe uſe hickory nuts in plenty, and make a milkey liquor of them, which they call milk of nuts; the proceſs is at bottom the ſame as what we uſe to make milk of almonds; this milk they are very fond of, and eat it with ſweet potatoes in it; they alſo make a great uſe of Bears fat as oil; the fleſh the traders have learned them to make into bacon, exactly reſembling that of a hog; but all theſe diſhes ſuit but ill the palate of an European, and when they have any deer or buffalo fleſh at home, it is ſo dried as to have no taſte in it.

The knowledge they have of cattle keeping is borrowed from the traders among them, who, notwithſtanding the ordinance againſt ſettling on Indian grounds, have many of them plantations, and raiſe cattle and hogs; one Caldwell has the greateſt ſtock; and *Opaya Mingo Luxi* went in 1771 to complain of it, but Caldwell, knowing that no ſavage can withſtand the words of a white man, took advantage thereof, and ſo intimidated the ſavage, by his meer preſence at Penſacola, when in the ſuperintendant's hall, in order to lodge his information, and make his complaint that *Opaya Mingo Luxi* himſelf ſaid he had nothing againſt him; but as the very Commiſſary has a plantation and cattle, and keeps negroes &c. for the cultivation thereof (though

he

he keeps his cattle under the name of *Opaya Mataha)* i think very little will be done to hinder it; and upon the whole, i think the affair of advantage to the ſavages, who muſt ſoon generally give into this way of life for their own preſervation, or elſe remove further from us.

This office of Commiſſary ſeems to me the moſt needleſs expence the crown is at, as it only ſerves for a ſubject of ridicule both to the traders and ſavages, which laſt ſcruple not often to give the officer in this nation the (among them) ſcandalous epithet of old woman; and he can do but little towards preventing diſorders among them, or in regulating the ſtandard of the trade; beſides, i am ſure that whatever Commiſſiary dared to pretend to be any thing more than a cypher, would run an imminent riſque of his life.

Their numbers have been very large, and they themſelves have a tradition that they were a colony from another nation in the Weſt, and that they firſt ſet themſelves down near the *Ohio*, but ſoon removed to their preſent Site; the greateſt number that their gunmen can now be reckoned at, does not exceed too hundred and fifty; it is really amazing, to think, that ſuch a handfull keeps about ten thouſand of the men of the other tribes from deſtroying them; but their ferocity and the way of making war among the ſavages which gives no advantage to numbers, becauſe the war parties of a ſmall nation are as numerous as thoſe of a larger one) has long ſaved them from deſtruction.

Strong liquors make a ſad havock among theſe as among all other nations of the ſavages in the North.

They

They are ſtrong, and ſwift of foot, and their exerciſe at home is chiefly their ball play, a very laborious diverſion.

They are horridly given to ſodomy, committing that crime even on the dead bodies of their enemies, thereby (as they ſay) degrading them into women.

In their war parties, they have generally one who has done moſt miſchief to the enemy for their leader; but he is ſo far from having a command, that an attempt, to do more than propoſing whether ſuch or ſuch an undertaking would not be moſt adviſeable, or at moſt perſuading them to it, would at leaſt be followed by a total deſertion.

They are very ceremonious in their preparations for war, and their fondneſs for witchcraft makes them look for omens of futurity.

They and all other ſavages have the greateſt ſhare of patience imaginable; when a ſcalp or priſoner is in queſtion, they will travel hundreds of miles in the deſarts, with amazing precaution, enduring hunger, and often thirſt, at a great rate; nay if their proviſions fail before they ſtrike the blow, they have been known to return to hunt for more in ſome ſafe place, and without going home, to make a ſecond or third attempt.

They make war by ſtratagem, ſurpriſe or ambuſh, deſpiſing us as fools for expoſing ourſelves to be ſhot at like marks. A man's valour with them conſiſts in their cunning, and he is deemed the greateſt hero who employs moſt art in ſurpriſing his enemy; they never ſtrike a blow unleſs they think themſelves ſure of a retreat, and the loſs of many men is an infamous crime laid to the charge of the party,

They

They bury their dead almoſt the moment the breath is out of the body, in the very ſpot under the couch on which the deceaſed died, and the neareſt relations mourn over it with woeful lamentations; the women are very vociferous in it, but the men do it in ſilence, taking great care not to be ſeen any more than heard at this buſineſs; the mourning continues about a year, which they know by counting the moons, they are every morning and evening, and at firſt throughout the day at different times, employed in the exerciſe of this laſt duty.

A people who by many peculiar cuſtoms, are very different from the other red men on the continent, will next amuſe us: They are the Chactaws, more commonly known by the name of the Flatheads. Theſe people are the only nation from whom i could learn any idea of a traditional account of a firſt origin; and that is their coming out of a hole in the ground, which they ſhew between their nation and the Chicaſaws; they tell us alſo that their neighbours were ſurpriſed at ſeeing a people riſe at once out of the earth; dark as this account of a firſt exiſtence of theſe people is to us, we diſcover in it a higher idea of an origin than among their neighbours, who never pretend to tell from whence they came, and have only looſe ideas of a migration from the north weſt; which prevail among the Chicaſaws and all other ſouthern nations.

The Chactaws may more properly be called a nation of farmers than any ſavages i have met with; they are the moſt conſiderable people in Florida, and their ſituation may be known by

the

the annexed plan of their country: Their hunting grounds are in proportion leſs conſiderable than any of their neighbours; but as they are very little jealous of their territories, nay with eaſe part with them, the Chicaſaws and they never interrupt each other in their hunting; as i mentioned before.

They are in their warlike temper far from being ſuch cowards as people in general will pretend, but it is true they are not ſo fond of wandering abroad to do miſchief as the other ſavages are; few of ſuch expeditions are undertaken by them, and they give for a reaſon, that in going abroad they may chance to be obliged to content themſelves with a woman's or child's ſcalp, but in ſtaying at home and waiting the attack of the enemy, they by purſuing them, are ſure to take men, which is a greater mark of valour: be this as it will, it is certain they are carefully, cunningly, and bravely watchfull at home, and on ſeveral occaſions they have, after many inſults, boldly offered to meet their enemies in equal numbers on a plain, which has always been by the other ſavages treated with ſcorn, as cowardice; however when it has happened by chance that they meet ſo, we have ſeen them brave and victorious. Even in the very town of Mobile, an action of this kind happened deſerving a record, when they drove their enemies (the Creeks) through the river, and but for their inability to ſwim, they would have totally deſtroyed them; the Captain *Hooma* or red Captain fighting with forty Men againſt three hundred Creeks, and with his own hand deſtroying thirteen of their Chiefs, even when fighting on his knees, and

when

when he fell, bravely telling who he was, and his being flead alive for his heroiſm, is ſo freſh in every one's memory (being not above ſix Years ago) that many living evidences can teſtify it; I thought the action worthy of this attempt, to ſave it from oblivion. They have deſerted many of their eaſtern frontier towns ſince their preſent war with the Creeks, but during my ſtay in their nation, i ſaw four or five inſtances of their not ſuffering their enemy to eſcape unpuniſhed, when he dared to commit depredations, and they valued themſelves on the event of the preſent war, when in 1771, news coming among the Traders, that the Creeks computed their loſs at near three hundred perſons, and they having gueſſed the number of their's, loſt much the ſame; they ſaid, we have loſt many women and children and even of them ſome Scalps have been retaken, but we like men, have killed men only, and got all the marks thereof; this war began in Auguſt 1765; the readers may judge at the greatneſs of their exploits, when i aſſure them, that that number was the total loſs during all that time.

Theſe ſavages were the ſtaunch and firm friends of the French while they continued on the continent, until ſome Engliſh traders found means to draw the eaſt party, and the diſtrict of *Cooſa* (which together are called *Oypat-oocooloo*, or the ſmall nation) into a civil war with the weſtern diviſions called *Oocooloo-Falaya*, *Oocooloo-Hanalé*, and *Chickaſawhays*, which after many conflicts and the deſtruction of eaſt *Congeeto*, ended with the peace in 1763. I believe they are a nation whoſe word may be depended on

when they give into the intereſt of any perſon, and that their faith is to be better relied on than that of the Chicaſaws or Creeks, which two laſt are really verſed in all the gallic tricks of deceit.

At the congreſs of 1771, there were two thouſand three hundred of this nation nearly all men, at Mobile on the ſuperintendants books; in the nation i found at above ſeventy of their villages, about two thouſand men, and in the woods and hunting grounds, i was at and heard of as many camps as could make no leſs than ſix hundred men more. The French uſed to keep them very poor, but the yearly ſmall gifts they were accuſtomed to, were more proper to leave an idea of gratitude on the mind of a ſavage, than our ſeptennial great ones.

Monſieur de Kerlerec and others made a fine juggle and kind of monopoly of this trade, which was very ill brooked by the French; but although i make no doubt of the Gentlemen's having gone beyond the orders of their court, and notwithſtanding i am a bitter enemy to unreaſonable regraters, yet i am certain that a monopoly of this trade under proper reſtrictions would prove an advantage and ſecurity to the colonies, ſince now the villainous over reachings, chicanery, and mutual calumniations of the abandoned wretches, who reſide among the ſavages, joined to their worſe than brutiſh or ſavage way of life, tend to the rendering the nation to which they belong infamous, deſpicable, and ſcandalous among the ſavages, as well as to turn the hopes of advantage into a real diſadvantage; and i dare venture to ſay, that unleſs ſuch reſtrictions take place, the different ſavages will always find

reaſon

reaſon to complain againſt the colonies, and join in cabals againſt the poor ſettlers in the remote counties, and at laſt oblige the colonies to take the diſagreable ſtep of realizing our mock authority, by extirpating all ſavages that dare to remain on the Eaſt of the Miſſiſſippi.

But to return to the war-like inclinations of the Chactaws, and not to involve myſelf in politicks; i take them to be a brave people, who can upon occaſion defend themſelves very coolly, for during my ſtay in the nation, a woman of that tribe made a bargain with me to give her ammunition for ſome proviſions i bought of her; and when i expreſſed my ſurpriſe thereat, ſhe informed me that ſhe kept a gun to defend herſelf as well as her huſband did; and i have ſeveral times ſeen armed women in motion with the parties going in purſuit of the invading enemy, who having completed their intended murder, were flying off.

They never exerciſed ſo much cruelty upon their captive enemies as the other ſavages; they almoſt always brought them home to ſhew them, and then diſpatched them with a bullet or hatchet; after which, the body being cut into many parts, and all the hairy pieces of ſkin converted into ſcalps, the remainder is buried and the above trophies carried home, where the women dance with them till tired; then they are expoſed on the tops of the hot houſes till they are annihiliated. The ſame treatment is exerciſed on thoſe who are killed near the nation, but he that falls in battle at a diſtance is barely ſcalped.

Their addictedneſs to pretended witchcraft leads them into a very ſuperſtitious behavour

when

when on an expedition which is remarkable, they carry with them a certain thing which they look on as the genius of the party; it is moſt commonly the ſtuffed ſkin of an owl of a large kind; they are very careful of him, keep a guard over him, and offer him a part of their meat; ſhould he fall, or any other ways be diſordered in poſition, the expedition is fruſtrated; they always ſet him with his head towards the place of deſtination, and if he ſhould prove to be turned directly contrary, they conſider this as portending ſome very bad omen, and an abſolute order to return; ſhould therefore any one's heart fail him, he needs only watch his opportunity to do this to ſave his character of a brave or true man. There is alſo a ſpecies of *Motacilla* (which i often endeavoured to catch, in vain) whoſe chirping near the camp, will occaſion their immediate return.

Their war camps are already mentioned.

They are given to pilfering, but not ſo much as the Chicaſaws.

They are the ſwifteſt of foot of any ſavages in America, and very expert in tracking a flying enemy, who very ſeldom eſcapes.

Their leader can not pretend to *command* on an expedition, the moſt he can do, is to endeavour to *perſuade*, or at the extent, he can only pretend to a greater experience in order to enforce his counſel; ſhould he pretend to order, deſertion would at leaſt be his puniſhment, if not death.

Their exerciſes agree pretty much with what i have ſeen among other nations: from their infancy they learn the uſe of bows and arrows; they

are

are never beaten or otherways rudely chaſtiſed, and very ſeldom chid; this education renders them very willful and wayward, yet i think it preferable to the cruel and barbarous treatment indiſcriminately uſed by ſome European parents, who might with ſlight puniſhments by the excellency of wholeſome chriſtian Admonitions, work in a very different manner on the tender inclinations of pliable infancy.

The young ſavages alſo uſe a very ſtrait cane eight or nine feet long, cleared of its inward diviſions of the joints; in this they put a ſmall arrow, whoſe one end is covered one third of the whole length with cotton or ſomething ſimilar to it: this they hold neareſt their mouth and blow it ſo expertly as ſeldom to miſs a mark fifteen or twenty yards off and that ſo violently as to kill ſquirrils and birds therewith; with this inſtrument they often plague dogs and other animals according to the innate diſpoſition to cruelty of all ſavages, being encouraged to take a delight in torturing any poor animal that has the misfortune to fall into their hands; thinking beſt of him, who can longeſt keep the victim in pain, and invent the greateſt variety of torture. When growing up, they uſe wreſtling, running, heaving and lifting great weights, the playing with the ball two different ways, and their favourite game of *chunké*, all very violent exerciſes.

The exceſs in ſpirituous liquors to which they uſe themſelves, is really incredible.

Their meetings about ſerious matters are at night. Their belief in charms and exorciſms is firm and out of reaſon, and he that ſhould dare

openly

openly to boaſt of this gift is ſure to loſe his life on the firſt misfortune in the town where he reſides; but if it is only pretended to extend to the cure of wounds and diſeaſes it is overlooked; when they prepare for war, and when they return they uſe exorciſms, they call them all phyſic though only bare words or actions; and if they prove unſucceſsful, they ſay the phyſic was not ſtrong enough; it is no ſmall diverſion to ſee a Chactaw during this preparation act all his ſtrange geſtures, and the day before his departure painted ſcarlet and black almoſt naked and with ſwan wings to his arms run like a bacchant up and down through the place of his abode; not drunk neither, as rum is by them avoided like poiſon during this preparation.

While i was in this nation, i had the misfortune to be afflicted with a violent fever which ended in a flux; my own ſkill being baffled, i applied to my guide, who had the reputation of being a knowing Phyſician well acquainted with the ſimples uſed among them. I ſubmitted to his preſcription; he got ſome herbs and roots, and made a decoction of them; i drank it; while the effect was expected, he alternately burnt ſome of the ſimples and ſat down by me blowing upon me to drive away the diſorder; i found no benefit by it; and on my refuſing an other trial he ſaid i was a fool, the next time the phyſic would be ſtronger, but he was not affronted.

The French have made great attempts to render this nation Chriſtians; at *Chicaſawhay* there reſided a miſſionary and a chapel was built, but they were abſolutely unſucceſsful; the ſavages always derided the Jeſuit, called him a woman,

and

and would frequently desire him to take away his physic, thereby meaning he would undo his ceremony of baptism; and when the English arrived there they would go up to the altar and imitate all the jesuitical farce, telling them that they were not such fools as to hear him; the chapel was destroyed before i came there in 1771, but the cross (being of lightwood*) stood yet.

Their play at ball is either with a small ball of deer skin or a large one of woollen rags; the first is thrown with battledores, the second with the hand only; this is a trial of skill between village and village; after having appointed the day and field for meeting, they assemble at the time and place, fix two poles across each other at about an hundred and fifty feet apart, they then attempt to throw the ball through the lower part of them, and the opposite party trying to prevent it, throw it back among themselves, which the first again try to prevent; thus they attempt to beat it about from one to the other with amazing violence, and not seldom broken limbs or dislocated joints are the consequence; their being almost naked, painted and ornamented with feathers, has a good effect on the eye of the by stander during this violent diversion; a number is agreed on for the score, and the party who first gets this number wins.

The women play among themselves (after the men have done) disputing with as much eagerness as the men; the stakes or betts are generally high. There is no difference in the other game with the large ball, only the men and women play promiscuously, and they use no battledores.

Their favourite game of *chunké* is a plain proof of the evil consequences of a violent passion for

* The heart of yellow pine.

gaming

gaming upon all kinds, claſſes and orders of men; at this they play from morning till night, with an unwearied application, and they bet high; here you may ſee a ſavage come and bring all his ſkins, ſtake them and loſe them; next his pipe, his beads, trinkets and ornaments; at laſt his blanket, and other garment, and even all their arms, and after all it is not uncommon for them to go home, borrow a gun and ſhoot themſelves; an inſtance of this happened in 1771 at *Eaſt Yaſoo* a ſhort time before my arrival. Suicide has alſo been practiſed here on other occaſions, and they regard the act as a crime, and bury the body as unworthy of their ordinary funeral rites.

The mannner of playing this game is thus: They make an alley of about two hundred feet in length, where a very ſmooth caly ground is laid, which when dry is very hard; they play two together having each a ſtreight pole of about fifteen feet long; one holds a ſtone, which is in ſhape of a truck, which he throws before him over this alley, and the inſtant of its departure, they ſet off and run; in running they caſt their poles after the ſtone, he that did not throw it endeavours to hit it, the other ſtrives to ſtrike the pole of his antagoniſt in its flight ſo as to prevent its hitting the ſtone; if the firſt ſhould ſtrike the ſtone he counts one for it, and if the other by the dexterity of his caſt ſhould prevent the pole of his opponent hitting the ſtone, he counts one, but ſhould both miſs their aim the throw is renewed; and in caſe a ſcore is won the winner caſts the ſtone and eleven is up; they hurl this ſtone and pole with wonderful dexterity and violence, and fatigue themſelves much at it.

The

The women alſo have a game where they take a ſmall ſtick, or ſomething elſe off the ground after having thrown up a ſmall ball which they are to catch again, having picked up the other; they are fond of it, but aſhamed to be ſeen at it. I believe it is this propenſity to gaming which has given theſe ſavages an idea of a *meum* and *tuum* above all other nations of America.

They are extravagant in their debauches; when met for a drinking match ſome women attend them, when theſe find the men beginning to be heated with liquor they will take away all the weapons found near them and return with a callebaſh under their wrappers, then mixing with them, the men offer them their bottles, they take a draught and when not obſerved they empty it into the callebaſh, which when full they empty into bottles brought for that purpoſe, and thus they will accumulate two or three bottles full, and with the help of a little water, ſtill make them more; after a while rum fails among the men, and the women acquaint them, that they have got ſome; they are told to fetch it; they refuſe, ſaying it coſt them much and they cannot give it for nothing; a bargain enſues, they receive the conſideration firſt, and then bring it; in this way of trade they will often get all the effects the men can command for ſuch a delicate nectar.

I have a great opinion of a Chactaw's faithfully performing his promiſes, i have ſeen ſeveral little inſtances thereof; they deteſt a liar, and ſhew gratitude to a man that keeps his word; my guide whoſe name was *Pooſkoos Mingo* gave me

me an inſtance of this; when i left him he ſaid i had ſatisfied him for every thing like a true man, but if i would give him a ſpeaking paper to the great white man at Mobile (meaning John Stuart Eſq) then he would ſtill better know it; i gave him a note recommending him to that gentleman, and becauſe he had been of extraordinary ſervice on the journey, begged he would allow him ſomething more than common; it had the deſired effect, he got a good many things extraordinary; when i was afterwards miſſing, and it was thought the Creeks had deſtroyed us in coming from the Chicaſaw nation, this ſavage armed to avenge my death, and was actually taking the war phyſick as they term it, when news was brought to the nation of my arrival at Mobile.

They are well made both men and women; the women have agreeable features and countenances, but their naſty way of life in general diſfigures them; thoſe that are cleanly are really attractive; the women disfigure the heads of their male children by means of bags of ſand, flattening them into different ſhapes, thinking it adds to their beauty; both men and women wear long hair, except ſome young fellows who begin to imitate the Chicaſaw faſhion, and both ſexes mark their faces and bodies, particularly the women with indelible blue figures of fancy, among which is a great deal of voluted work of vaſt variety.

Before the Engliſh traders came among them, there were ſcarcely any half breed, but now they abound among the younger ſort.

Both ſexes are wanton to the higheſt degree, and a certain faſhionable diſorder is very common among them. Sodomy is alſo practiſed but

not

not to the ſame exceſs as among the Creeks and Chicaſaws, and the *Cinædi* among the Chactaws are obliged to dreſs themſelves in woman's attire, and are highly deſpiſed eſpecially by the women.

Their buildings are exactly ſimilar to thoſe of the Chicaſaws.

Their way of life in general may be called induſtrious, they will do what no uncompelled ſavage will do, that is work in the field to raiſe grain; and one may among them hire not only a guide, or a man to build a houſe, or make a fence, but even to hoe his grounds; nay they will for payment be your menial ſervants to the meaneſt offices; no other unſubdued ſavage will do any more of all theſe than be your guide; they are very ingenious in making tools, utenſils and furniture; i have ſeen a narrow tooth comb made by one of theſe ſavages with a knife only out of a root of the *Dioſpyros* that was as well finiſhed as i ever ſaw one with all the neceſſary tools; this ſhews their patience.

The Chactaws are very hoſpitable at their hunting camps, and there only they will entertain a ſtranger at free coſt.

Here i muſt relate a particular cuſtom of theſe people: When a deer or bear is killed by them, they divide the liver into as many pieces as there are fires, and ſend a boy to each with a piece, that the men belonging to each fire may burn it, but the women's fires are excluded from this ceremony, and if each party kills one or more animals, the livers of them are all treated in the ſame manner.

Horſes of a good kind are in ſuch plenty as to be ſold for a kegg of four gallons half water half rum;

rum; they would be excellent were it not that they back them before the animals attain two years of age.

They cultivate for bread all the ſpecies and varieties of the *Zea*, likewiſe two varieties of that ſpecies of *Panicum* vulgarly called guinea corn; a greater number of different *Phaſeolus* and *Dolichos* than any i have ſeen elſewhere; the eſculent *Convolvulus* (vulgo) ſweet potatoes, and the *Helianthus Giganteus*; with the ſeed of the laſt made into flour and mixed with flour of the *Zea* they make a very palatable bread; they have carried the ſpirit of huſbandry ſo far as to cultivate leeks, garlic, cabbage and ſome other garden plants, of which they make no uſe, in order to make profit of them to the traders; they alſo uſed to carry poultry to market at Mobile, although it lays at the diſtance of an hundred and twenty miles from the neareſt town; dunghill fowls. and a very few ducks, with ſome hogs, are the only eſculent animals raiſed in the nation.

They make many kinds of bread of the above grains with the help of water, Eggs, or hickory milk; they boil the eſculent convolvulus and eat it with the hickory milk; they boil green ears of corn, they boil corn and beans together, and make many other preparations of their vegetables, but freſh meat they have only at the hunting ſeaſon, and then they never fail to eat while it laſts; of their fowls and hogs they ſeldom eat any as they keep them for profit.

In failure of their crops, they make bread of the different kinds of *Fagus*, of the *Dioſpyros*, of a ſpecies of *Convolvulus* with a tuberous root found in the low cane grounds, of the root of a

ſpecies

ſpecies of *Smilax*, of live oak acorns, and of the young ſhoots of the *Canna*; in ſummer many wild plants chiefly of the *Drupi* and *Bacciferous* kind ſupply them.

They raiſe ſome tobacco, and even ſell ſome to the traders, but when they uſe it for ſmoaking they mix it with the leaves of two ſpecies of the *Cariaria* or of the *Liquidambar Styraciflua* dried and rubbed to pieces.

They prepare a kind of cloth out of the bark of a ſpecies of *Morus*, and with its root dye it yellow; i have all the reaſon in the world to believe, that this cloth might be manufactured into paper.

Buffaloe's wool alſo furniſhes them a material for a uſeful manufacture.

They likewiſe make blankets and other coverings out of the feathers of the breaſts of wild turkies by a proceſs ſimilar to that of our wig makers, when they knit hair together for the purpoſe of making wigs.

They have a root by means of which they dye moſt ſubſtances of a bright laſting ſcarlet, but hitherto i have not been able to diſcover what it was.

Many among them are well acquainted with plants of every kind, and apply them judicially both externally and internally; to others again they attribute ſupernatural virtues; for inſtance, there is one which they make uſe of to procure rain; for this purpoſe they have a number of people in their nation called rainmakers; theſe aſſemble in a deſerted field, and they boil this plant in a large pot, dancing and ſinging round it with numberleſs aukward geſtures; then if it

ſhould

ſhould happen to rain ſoon after, the jugglers boaſt the virtue of the plant; but ſhould no rain follow, they ſay the phyſick was not ſtrong enough; they take care however not to employ this rain compelling herb unleſs a cloudy day forebodes rain. The plant is very ſingular, and i believe a nondeſcript; i ſaw two ſpecies of it, but could not aſcertain the genius; the ſavages call it *Eſta Hoola* or the moſt beloved.

The moſt remarkable thing of theſe ſavages is their inability to ſwim, occaſioned by their being remote from large waters; this art the people of *Chicaſahay* and *Yoani* who live on the banks of the *Paſta Oocooloo* enjoy alone, and incredible as it may appear, even moſt of their horſes partake of this inability, as many people and among others the Commiſſary for the nation have informed me from their own experience.

They help their wives in the labour of the fields and many other works; near one half of the men have never killed a deer or turkey during their lives. Game is ſo ſcarce, that during my circuit through the nation we never ſaw any, and we had but two or three opportunities of eating veniſon in as many months; they take wives without much ceremony, and live together during pleaſure, and after ſeparation which is not very frequent, they often leave the ſecond to retake the firſt wife.

Fornication is among them thought to be a natural accident, therefore a girl is not the worſe looked on for ten or a dozen ſlips; but although they are not over jealous of their wives, they puniſh adultery in the woman, unleſs ſhe happens to belong to a ſtronger or more noted and numerous

rous family than the huſband; in which caſe he ſcarce ventures even to put her away; but if ſhe is doomed to ſuffer, her puniſhment is to be at a publick place (for that purpoſe ſet apart at every town) carnally known by all who chooſe to be preſent, young and old; thus the poor wretch after defending herſelf and ſtruggling hard with the firſt three or four, at laſt ſuffers motionleſs the brutality of perhaps an hundred or an hundred and fifty of theſe barbarians; the ſame treatment is undergone by a girl or woman who belonging to another town or quarter of the nation, comes to a place where ſhe is a ſtranger and cannot give a very good account of herſelf and buſineſs, or the reaſon of her coming there; this they call running through the meadow, and if a white man happens to be in the town, they ſend him an offer or invitation to take the firſt heat; they plead in excuſe for ſo barbarous a cuſtom, that the only way to diſguſt lewd women is to give them at once what they ſo conſtantly and eagerly purſue.

The education of their children i have already mentioned.

The women ſuffer no more by child birth than any other ſavage women; they retire into a place of ſolitude at the time, and after delivery return to their daily labour; however while i ſtaid at *Oka Altakkala* in this nation one died in labour within about eighty yards of the houſe i reſided in.

There are no laws or regulations obſervable among theſe people, except the *Lex Talionis*, and although they have a ſtrict notion of diſtinction in property, and even divide their lands, we ne-

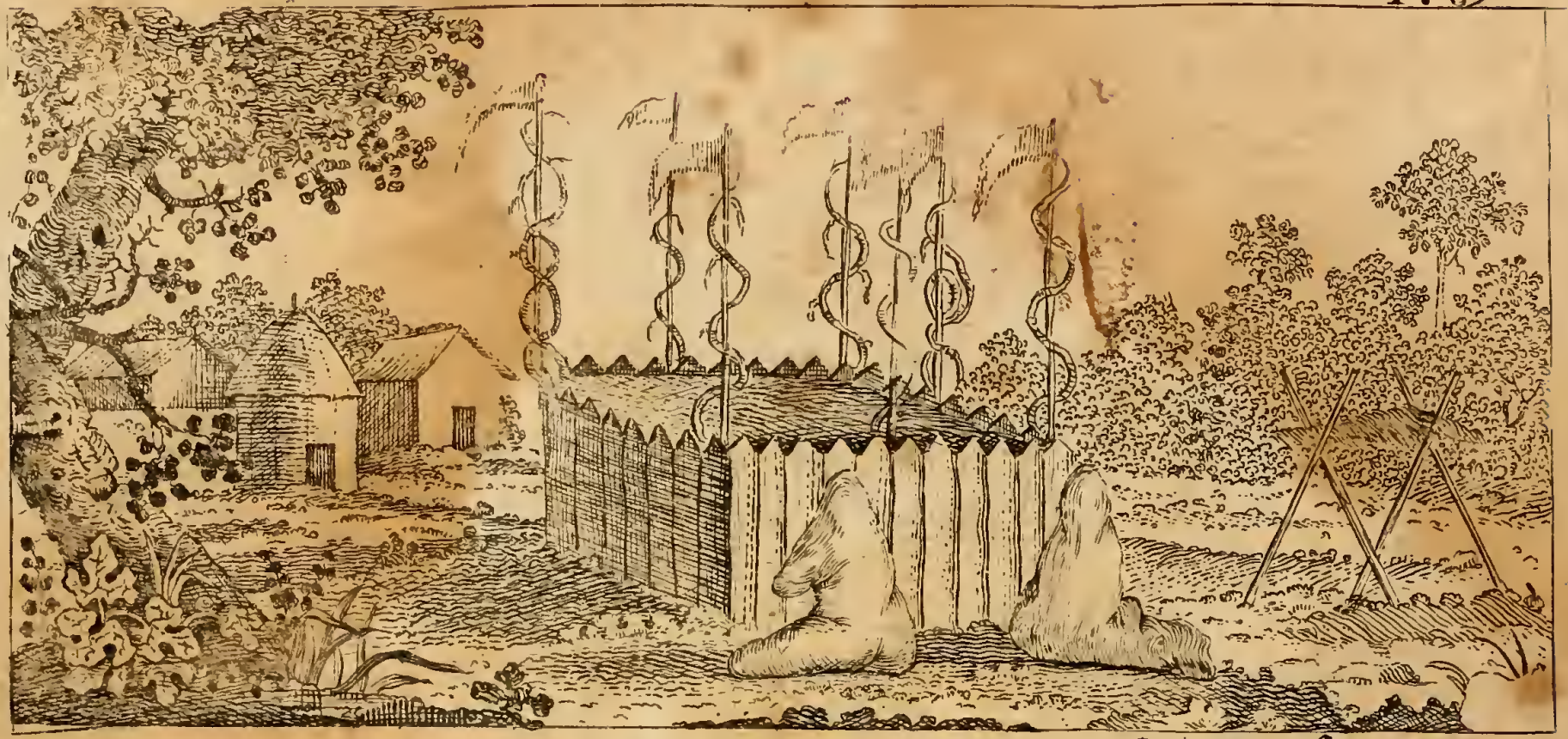
ver

ver hear them quarrel about boundaries; the above law is ſo ſtrictly followed, that i am furniſhed with the following anecdote: It happened that a young Chactaw having done ſomething deſerving reproof, he was therefore chid by his mother, this he took ſo ill as in the fury of his ſhame to reſolve his own death, which he effected with a gun; his ſiſter as his neareſt relation thought herſelf bound to avenge his death, and knowing the circumſtance told her mother ſhe had cauſed her brother's death and muſt pay for his life; the old woman reſigned herſelf to her fate, and died by the hands of her daughter, who ſhot her with a gun which ſhe had provided for the cataſtrophe.

In ſickneſs the juggling Quacks are conſulted, and as they are naturally good connoiſſeurs in ſimples, and judge pretty well of the nature of diſeaſes, they often ſucceed; but if a diſorder is obſtinate or incurable, the relations of the patient aſſemble in his houſe, bewail his misfortune, cry bitterly, take their leave of him, and he tells them how tired he is of life, that his misfortunes are unſufferable, and that it is good he ſhould die; upon this an univerſal howl is raiſed, the neareſt male relation jumps on him, and violently in a moment breaks the neck of the patient, and then they rejoice that his miſery is over, but lamentations for his departure ſoon ſucceed.

The following treatment of the dead is very ſtrange, yet we find *Apollonius Rhodius* mention a ſimilar cuſtom of the inhabitants of *Colchis* near *Pontus*; we find *Ives* in his voyage relating the like of the remainder of the ancient Perſians, and we find again in *Hawkeſworth*'s voyage the peo-

ple



B.R. inv et fecit

ple of *Otaheite*, performing their obſequies in a manner little or nothing different from the Chactaws; but it would be an hard matter to aſſign a reaſon for it among the latter; that it is not with any ſolicitude about the diſpoſition of the body in regard to a future ſtate is plain; all the reaſon i could hear of them was, that they would not ſo ſoon forget their deceaſed friends, and might be the oftener ſtimulated to weep over their remains. As ſoon as the deceaſed is departed, a ſtage is erected (as in the annexed plate is repreſented) and the corpſe is laid on it and covered with a bear ſkin; if he be a man of note, it is decorated, and the poles painted red with vermillion and bears oil; if a child, it is put upon ſtakes ſet acroſs; at this ſtage the relations come and weep, aſking many queſtions of the corpſe, ſuch as, why he left them? did not his wife ſerve him well? was he not contented with his children? had he not corn enough? did not his land produce ſufficient of every thing? was he afraid of his enemies? &c. and this accompanied by loud howlings; the women will be there conſtantly, and ſometimes with the corrupted air and heat of the ſun faint ſo as to oblige the by ſtanders to carry them home; the men will alſo come and mourn in the ſame manner, but in the night or at other unſeaſonable times, when they are leaſt likely to be diſcovered.

The ſtage is fenced round with poles, it remains thus a certain time but not a fixed ſpace, this is ſometimes extended to three or four months, but ſeldom more than half that time. A certain ſet of venerable old Gentlemen who wear very long nails as a diſtinguiſhing badge on the

thumb, fore and middle finger of each hand, conſtantly travel through the nation (when i was there, i was told there were but five of this reſpectable order) that one of them may acquaint thoſe concerned, of the expiration of this period, which is according to their own fancy; the day being come, the friends and relations aſſemble near the ſtage, a fire is made, and the reſpectable operator, after the body is taken down, with his nails tears the remaining fleſh off the bones, and throws it with the intrails into the fire, where it is conſumed; then he ſcrapes the bones and burns the ſcrapings likewiſe; the head being painted red with vermillion is with the reſt of the bones put into a neatly made cheſt (which for a Chief is alſo made red) and depoſited in the loft of a hut built for that purpoſe, and called bone houſe; each town has one of theſe; after remaining here one year or thereabouts, if he be a man of any note, they take the cheſt down, and in an aſſembly of relations and friends they weep once more over him, refreſh the colour of the head, paint the box red, and then depoſit him to laſting oblivion.

An enemy and one who commits ſuicide is buried under the earth as one to be directly forgotten and unworthy the above ceremonial obſequies and mourning.

A mixture of the remains of the *Cawittas*, *Talepooſas*, *Cooſas*, *Apalachias*, *Conſhacs* or *Cooſades*, *Oakmulgis*, *Oconis*, *Okchoys*, *Alibamons*, *Natchez*, *Weetumkus*, *Pakanas*, *Taënſas*, *Chacſihoomas*, *Abékas* and ſome other tribes whoſe names i do not recollect, will be the next ſubject of our attention; they call themſelves *Muſcokees* and are at preſent known

known to us by the general name of *Creeks*, and divided into upper and lower Creeks; alſo thoſe they call *allies* and are a colony from the others living far ſouth in Eaſt Florida.

They inhabit a noble and fruitful country, where a civilized people in future will enjoy all the earthly ſweets they can wiſh for, and where the inhabitants will always be placed commodiouſly for navigation, ſo as with little trouble to bring all the valuable produce of a rich ſoil ſituate in a temperate air of the middle latitudes to a market; in a word, i foreſee this will become the ſeat of trade and its attendant riches in North America.

They are the next moſt numerous nation after the *Chactaws*; but becauſe i have not been ſo univerſally through this nation as through the the others, i cannot ſo nearly calculate their numbers, but to all appearance, three thouſand five hundred gun men is all the extent; this confederacy of remnants is a race of very cunning fellows, and with regard to us, the moſt to be dreaded of any nation on the continent, as well for their indefatigable thirſt for blood (which makes them travel incredibly for a ſcalp or priſoner) as for their being truly politicians bred, and ſo very jealous of their lands, that they will not only not part with any, but endeavour conſtantly to enlarge their territories by conqueſt and claiming large tracts ftom the Cherokees and Chactaws.

As an inſtance of their politicks, i beg leave to relate the following fact: When in 1764 and 1765, Meſſrs. Rea and Galphus of Georgia, had the contract of providing Penſacola with beef,

they

they were of neceſſity obliged to have the cattle drove through this nation, who never ſuffered any but *oxen* to paſs, the tendency of this prohibition muſt be obvious to every reader.

They are all remarkably well ſhaped, they live in a level country full of rivers, are expert ſwimmers, and in general a very hardy race; what deſerves notice here is that their *Thorax* is very ſhallow, ſo that a ſavage of this race may appear almoſt a giant by the breadth of his ſhoulders and yet not meaſure ſo much in circumference as an ordinary European; but whether this is the effect of art or nature, i cannot pretend to decide; their women are handſome and many of them very cleanly, they are very hoſpitable and never fail of making a ſtranger heartily welcome, offering him the pipe as ſoon as he arrives, while the good women are employed to prepare a diſh of veniſon and homany,* with ſome bread made of maize and flour, and being wraped in maize leaves, baked under the aſhes; when it is ſerved up they accompany it with bears fat purified to a perfect chryſtalline oyl, and a bottle of honey with which laſt article the country abounds, and it is of ſo good a quality, as in my opinion to exceed that of *Calabria* and *Minorca*.

In the lower nation and the allied tribes, there are many who keep rice by them and have plenty of beef; of all which articles they are profuſely liberal, and i believe had they only a ſingle potatoe, they would ſhare it with a ſtranger. In the fruit ſeaſon they never fail to accompany theſe regales with melons, peaches, plumbs, grapes, or ſome other wild fruit.

After

* Maize coarſly pounded, ſifted and boiled in water.

After the traveller is made welcome by his hoſt, the latter introduces him into the aſſembly, which is kept every evening at a place called the ſquare, of which we find one in each town. At this place he is entertained with tobacco and caſſine drink; this is alſo the common reſort of their old men and warriors to deliberate on matters of peace and war, to judge what ſteps are to be taken for the welfare of the nation, and to decide the fate of their neighbours; ſo that this ſquare doth not ill anſwer to the deſcription we have of the Roman *Forum* or Athenian *Areopage*; the evening ends in a dance, which is the common practice every night.

To relate any thing concerning the wars of this nation, would be no more than repeating what has been ſaid of the Chicaſaws.

Their way of life is in general very abundant; they have much more of veniſon, Bear, turkies; and ſmall game in their country than their neighbours have, and they raiſe abundance of ſmall cattle, hogs, turkeys, ducks and dunghill fowls (all which are very good in their kind) and of theſe they ſpare not; the labour of the field is all done by the women; no ſavages are more proud of being counted hunters, fiſhermen, and warriors: were they to cultivate their plentiful country, they might raiſe amazing quantities of grain and pulſe, as it is they have enough for their home conſumption, they buy a good deal of rice, and they are the only ſavages that ever i ſaw that could bear to have ſome rum in ſtore; yet they drink to exceſs as well as others; there are few towns in this nation where there is not ſome ſavage reſiding, who either trades of his own ſtock,

or

or is employed as a factor. They have more variety in their diet than other ſavages: They make pancakes; they dry the tongues of their veniſon; they make a cauſtick ſalt out of a kind of moſs found at the bottom of creeks and rivers, which although a vegetable ſalt, does not deliquiate on expoſing to the air; this they diſſolve in water and pound their dried veniſon till it looks like oakum and then eat it dipped in the above ſauce; they eat much roaſted aud boiled veniſon, a great deal of milk and eggs; they dry peaches and perſimmons, cheſnuts and the fruit of the *chamærops*, they alſo prepare a cake of the pulp of the ſpecies of the *paſſi flora*, vulgarly called may apple; ſome kinds of acorns they alſo prepare into good bread; the common eſculent *convolvulus* and the ſort found in the low woods, both called potatoes, are eat in abundance among them; they have plenty of the various ſpecies of *Zea* or maize, or the *Phaſcolis* and *Dolichos*, and of different kinds of *Panicum*; bears oyl, honey and hickory milk are the boaſt of the country; they have alſo many kinds of ſalt and freſh water turtle, and their eggs, and plenty of fiſh; we likewiſe find among them ſalted meats, corned veniſon iu particular, which is very fine; they cultivate abnudance of melons; in a word, they have naturally the greateſt plenty imaginable; were they to cultivate the earth they would have too much; vaſt numbers of horſes are bred here, but of an indifferent kind; and theſe ſavages are the greateſt horſe ſtealers yet known: it is impoſſible to be ſure of a horſe wherever theſe fellows come.

The Caſſine is by them uſed as a drink, they barbacue or toaſt the leaves and make a ſtrong decoction

decoction of them; the men only are permitted to drink this liquor to which they attribute many virtues, and it is made so strong as to be black and raise a froth; when they drink it at their assemblies in the square, they call it black drink.

Every afternoon a young savage warns the village to dance; as soon as it is dusky they make a a fire of dry pitch pine, and round this they dance in a circle with many strange gestures, postures, and cries; the women sing regularly and some very prettily to the musick of a kind of drum. I have heard them sing, and seen them dance to no more than the words *Yahoodela, Yahoyahena* for above two hours.

On this occasion i must not forget to mention an instance of female fondness for dress, which i saw at one of these dancing assemblies: I observed the women dressed their legs in a kind of leather stockings, hung full of the hoofs of the roe deer in form of bells, in so much as to make a sound exactly like that of the Castagnettes; i was very desirous of examining these stockings and had an opportunity of satisfying my curiosity on those of my landlady at her return home. I counted in one of her stockings four hundred and ninety three of these claws; there were nine of the women at the dance with this kind of ornament, so that allowing each of them to have had the same number of hoofs, and eight hoofs to a deer, there must have been killed eleven hundred and ten deer to furnish this small assembly of ladies with their ornaments, besides which, earrings, bracelets, &c. are by no means forgot; an instance of luxury in dress scarcely to be paralleled by our European ladies.

The men are alſo very fond of dreſs; my guide acroſs the Peninſula, employed above two hours at his toilet, at Mr. Moultrie's houſe, four miles from St. Auguſtine, before he would venture to ſhew himſelf in town.

Their principal exerciſes at home are ball playing in the manner afore related, and the juſt mentioned dances; the women are employed, beſides the cultivation of the earth, in dreſſing the victuals, preparing, ſcraping, braining, rubbing and ſmoaking the Roe ſkins, making mackſens of them, ſpinning buffaloe wool, making ſalt, preparing caſſine drink, drying the *chamærops* and *paſſiflora*, making cold flour for travelling, gathering nuts and making their milk; likewiſe in making baſkets, brooms, pots, bowls and other earthen and wooden veſſels.

They live nearly in the ſame kind of habitations as the two other nations already mentioned, except that their hot houſes are not circular but oblong ſquares; they learn their boys from their youth to endure all manner of hardſhips particularly ſwimming in the coldeſt weather; they make them frequently undergo ſcratching from head to foot through the ſkin with broken glaſs or gar fiſh teeth, ſo as to make them all in a gore of blood, and then waſh them with cold water; this is with them the *Arcanum* againſt all diſeaſes, but when they deſign it as a puniſhment to the boys, they dry ſcratch them (i. e) they apply no water after the operation, which renders it very painful; they endeavour as much as poſſible to teach them all manner of cruelty, by making them exerciſe it on the poor brute creation, in order to be the better verſed in it when

they

they want to exerciſe it on their own ſpecies, and others of the human genus, when they unhappily become their enemies.

As hoſpitable as this nation is to friends, as irreconcileably inhuman are they to their enemies; there is hardly an inſtance of one miſerable priſoner's ever having eſcaped their barbarity; the torments they put the wretched victims to, are too horrid to relate, and the account thereof can only ſerve to make human nature ſhudder.

No nation has ſo contemptible an opinion of us as theſe. They practice unnatural commerce with their own ſex to as high a degree as the Chicaſaws; they, like all other ſavages, are very fond of dogs, in ſo much as never to kill one out of a litter, and it is not uncommon in the nation to ſee a dog very lean, and ſo ſenſible of his misfortune as to ſeek a wall or poſt for his ſupport before he ventures to bark.

With regard to the women, their girls are the moſt arrant prudes and coquets in the world, though they will never ſcruple to ſell the uſe of their bodies when they can do it in private; a perſon who wiſhes to be accommodated here can generally be ſupplied for payment, and the ſavages think a young woman nothing the worſe for making uſe of her body, as they term it; but it is a great falſhood which has been related of theſe ſavages, that they exhort their young women to cohabitation with white men.

Polygamy is here allowed, though not generally made uſe of; they marry without much ceremony, ſeldom any more than to make ſome preſents to the parents, and to have a feaſt or hearty regale at the hut of the wife's Father;

when once married the women are bound to the ſtricteſt obſervation of obedience and conjugal fidelity, ſaying that ſhe that has once ſold herſelf, can not any more diſpoſe of any thing whatever; and of their wives they are the moſt unreaſonably jealous of any nation under the ſun. Adultery is puniſhed by ſevere flagellations and loſs of hair, noſe, and ears, in both parties, if they are taken; ſometimes they ſpare the noſe of the man, and i have known ſome inſtances of white men having this misfortune and being obliged to apply to the Commiſſary, or the neareſt Governor for a certificate to ſecure them from the imputation of the pillory.

Phyſick, or the knowledge of it, is another thing in which they pride themſelves not a little, but they apply that name to all kinds of exorciſms, juggling and legerdemain tricks, as well as to the knowledge of diſeaſes and the ſimples proper to cure them.

Once a year, about July, theſe people put out all the fires throughout the nation; they faſt the two next days; then the fire is lighted again according to their old faſhion (i. e.) by drilling with a hard piece of wood on a ſoft one till it catches which ſoon happens; thus all the fires are again lighted and univerſal feaſting enſues.

The women are juſt as eaſily delivered as thoſe of the other ſavages, and immediately after birth the infant is plunged into cold water.

They revere old age to exceſs; in extreme ſickneſs they will out of compaſſion break the neck of the decrepid or lingering patient.

The dead are buried in a fitting poſture, and they are furniſhed with a muſket, powder and ball,

a hatchet,

a hatchet, pipe, ſome tobacco, a club, a bow and arrows, a looking glaſs, ſome vermilion and other trinkets, in order to come well provided in the world of ſpirits.

The *Arkanzas*, *Kanzas*, *Kappas*, or *Kwappas* are the only nation of any note after the three above named, with whom Weſt Florida has any connection, notwithſtanding they live on the weſt ſide of the river; they are ſuppoſed to be about four hundred gun men.

This nation is famous for the death of *Ferdinand Soto* in the year 1543, after his immenſe journey from the Bay of *Tampe* through *Apalachia*, *Penſacola*, *Mobile*, and the Chicaſaw nation, &c. to the Miſſiſſippi, by his hiſtorian called *Rio Grande*; alſo the arrival of Mr. *de la Salle*, who in 1682, coming down this river and having taken formal poſſeſſion of this country, went further down to its mouth, obſerved it in Latitude 29, went up again as far as *Illinois*, thence to *Canada* and France, from whence he returned with a ſmall ſquadron in 1684 to find the mouth of the river once more, but through obſtinacy paſſed it ſo far as to get into the Bay of *St. Bernard* and river *Bravo*, where loſing his veſſels he attempted to find the *Arkanzas* a ſecond time, but after a long and tedious journey of almoſt three years he ſhared if poſſible a worſe fate than *Soto*, being murdered by his own people near the nation of the *Cæni* on the 29th of May 1687; this we gather from the writings of Mr. *Joutel* who was preſent at all the ſcenes i have related, concerning this affair, and who purſued the journey to the *Arkanzas* and *Canada*; this nation were till lately the declared enemies of the Chicaſaws;

their

their country is ſaid to be exceeding fine, but as i have not ſeen it i can not judge of it, i never ſaw above ſix of this race, therefore i only treat of them on account of their connection with the country i am deſcribing.

In general their manners are very like thoſe of all other ſavages, but among them i find a cuſtom not known by the other ſouthern nations which is that of a feaſt of dogs fleſh at the declaration of war, which is a common practiſe among all the northern tribes; we are alſo told that an *Arkanza* is counted a warrior in his nation for having killed his enemies dog.

As many various accounts have been given of the manner of a declaration of war by different ſavages, i will here acquaint my reader of my having more or leſs perſonal knowledge or acquaintance with every tribe between the river St. Lawrence and the bottom of the gulph of Darien, and i think i can give the following as an account that will ſtand the univerſal teſt in all that extent.

When war has been reſolved on by the leading men of the nation, a feaſt is prepared and all the chief warriors are invited; after a great deal of ſwilling, the cauſe of the aſſembly is eloquently made known by ſome Orator, and the intended expedition ſubmitted to the conſideration of the aſſembly; as ſoon as it is approved of, they paint themſelves red or black, aſſume a very gaſtly appearance and behaviour, adorning themſelves many uncouth ways; they dance their war dances under a continual roar of the death whoop, every one relates the great actions of his anceſtors, and ſings the praiſes of his own, as well paſt as fu-

ture;

ture; the inſults of the enemy are painted in their blackeſt colours, and a great deal of bloody advice to their young men with an univerſal cry of revenge! revenge! ends the farce, and then every one plans expeditions as he ſees proper and convenient to execute.

The practice of ſcalping their ſlain enemy i believe is univerſal, but thoſe in the neighbourhood of the Dutch colonies have laid it by for another, that of cutting off the hands, which was in conſequence of a reward the company gave them for the hands of ſuch runaway blacks as joined the rebel Negroes, becauſe there were inſtances of perſons ſcalped who have recovered, but after the loſs of hands they cannot any more uſe arms.

Juggling and pretence to witchcraft, as alſo conſulting of omens, is common to the *Arkanzas* as well as others, and paſſes by the name of phyſick.

They have ſo far a veneration for the alligator as not to deſtroy him, nor have i ſeen a ſavage who would willingly kill a ſnake.

The pipe is uſed here as with others, Tobacco in ſome ſhape or other ſeems to be the American ſymbol of peace, friendſhip and ſocial converſation, to which laſt the Europeans ſeem alſo to have applied it in imitation of the ſavages.

I am informed that they bury their dead like the Creeks with the addition of tying the head down to the knees.

To be particular about the remains of the *Tonicas*, *Chitimachas*, *Yaſoos*, *Hoomas*, *Mobilians*, *Paſca-Oocoolos*, *Hattakappas*, *Taënsas*, *Biloxis*, *Ybitoopas*, *Aquelon-Piſſas*, or *Colla-Piſſas*, *Tiaoux*, *Oaktaſhippas*

taſhippas, and many others, who have been deſtroyed by the French, would be needleſs, as there are not above from five to eighteen or twenty families of each of them left, who inhabit the banks of the Miſſiſſippi, diſperſed among the plantations, where they ſerve as hunters, and for ſome other laborious uſes; ſomething ſimilar to the ſubdued tribes of New England; and ſo unnatural is a humanized life to theſe people, that being as it were out of their element, this remnant melts daily like ſnow before the Sun.

To give an idea of Indian hieroglyphick painting, i have ſubjoined the two following cuts; the firſt is Chactaw, and means that an expedition by ſeventy men, led by ſeven principal warriors, and eight of inferior rank, had in an action killed nine of their enemies, of which they brought the ſcalps, and that the place where it was marked was the firſt publick place in their territories where they arrived with the ſcalps.

The ſecond is a painting in the Creek taſte, it means, that ten of that nation of the Stag family came in three canoes into their enemies country, that ſix of the party near this place, which was at *Oopah Ullah*, a brook ſo called on the road to the Chactaws, had met two men, and two women with a dog, that they lay in ambuſh for them, killed them, and that they all went home with the four ſcalps; the ſcalp in the ſtag's foot implies the honour of the action to the whole family.

Such my reader may be aſſured were the boaſted hieroglyphick paintings of *Muteczuma*'s people when *Cortes* landed in *Mexico*, and ſimilar to my deſcription were the people, the palaces and

temples

N2

B.R. N.J. fecit

P102

temples of *Mexico* ſo glorioufly painted in Spaniſh Rhodomontades, for what end i know not, but i can aſſure every one that theſe Iberian hiſtories of the conqueſt of *Mexico* are no other than truth very thickly veiled with abſurdities; for except the ſilver and gold which theſe ſavages might then have, believe me they differed nothing from others; and as an evident proof of this we ſee the free unconquered nations of Darien in poſſeſſion of gold and ſilver of their own finding, but very confined in their ideas of working it.

The primum Mobile of the welfare of theſe countries and of the wealth of their inhabitants are the African ſlaves; the primary fine ſpun conſtitution of Georgia, is a recent and ſtriking proof of this; that country would not this day have been worth the notice of any, had not the importation and uſe of Negroes been allowed on the arrival of Governor Reynolds; when this Gentleman came to the Government it had languiſhed under the adminiſtration of General Oglethorpe and the other truſtees for about twenty years and then the land was worth leſs than at the firſt beginning, but no ſooner had Mr. Reynolds arrived, and, among other uſeful regulations, the free uſe of ſlaves taken place, the country flouriſhed; it is now about ſeventeen years ago that this happened: Hutchinſon's iſland before Savannah was then ſold for twenty pounds ſterling, as yet there is a great deal of it unimproved and it cannot now be bought for ten thouſand pound ſterling, the improvements likewiſe are far more perfect; amazing as this increaſe of value is, yet i believe that

there

there are many inſtances of a ſtill greater, and I know ſome lands without any improvements on them of any kind, increaſe in ſix years time from five to forty ſhillings per acre, and many inhabitants of ſavannah can now teſtify, that before the ſurrender of the truſtees, almoſt every houſe there might have been bought for the conſideration of doing the militia duty in the room of the firſt owner only. Laſt year the exports of the province amounted to above 121,000l. ſterling, as may be ſeen by a ſtate of the cuſtom houſe books then publiſhed, an amazing increaſe in ſeventeen years from nothing!

The late fooliſh, not to call them cruel attempts of ſettling Eaſt Florida by whites from Europe (i mean as well from England as from the Levant) are likewiſe a very abſolute conviction of the neceſſity of having Negroe ſlaves; but as ſome people who are able to purchaſe, ſlaves, run away with the notion of the unlawfulneſs of holding a property in Negroes, and who are perhaps not a little miſled by the ſilly pamphlet publiſhed in ſome of the colonies, called "an addreſs to the inhabitants of the Bri-"tiſh ſettlements in America upon ſlave keep-"ing, &c." have attempted to ſettle without Negroes at all; i cannot in conſcience forbear to give my advice to all adventurers in Florida, who deſire to improve a plantation for their benefit, not to forget theſe uſeful though inferior members of ſociety; not but poor families may live in plenty, and by honeſt labour acquire a comfortable and eaſy ſituation in life as may be wiſhed for, but until their induſtry helps them to the means of buying one ſlave and ſo on till they get

more

there are many inſtances of a ſtill greater, and I know ſome lands without any improvements on them of any kind, increaſe in ſix years time from five to forty ſhillings per acre, and many inhabitants of ſavannah can now teſtify, that before the ſurrender of the truſtees, almoſt every houſe there might have been bought for the conſideration of doing the militia duty in the room of the firſt owner only. Laſt year the exports of the province amounted to above 121,000l. ſterling, as may be ſeen by a ſtate of the cuſtom houſe books then publiſhed, an amazing increaſe in ſeventeen years from nothing!

The late fooliſh, not to call them cruel attempts of ſettling Eaſt Florida by whites from Europe (i mean as well from England as from the Levant) are likewiſe a very abſolute conviction of the neceſſity of having Negroe ſlaves; but as ſome people who are able to purchaſe, ſlaves, run away with the notion of the unlawfulneſs of holding a property in Negroes, and who are perhaps not a little miſled by the ſilly pamphlet publiſhed in ſome of the colonies, called "an addreſs to the inhabitants of the Bri-"tiſh ſettlements in America upon ſlave keep-"ing, &c." have attempted to ſettle without Negroes at all; i cannot in conſcience forbear to give my advice to all adventurers in Florida, who deſire to improve a plantation for their benefit, not to forget theſe uſeful though inferior members of ſociety; not but poor families may live in plenty, and by honeſt labour acquire a comfortable and eaſy ſituation in life as may be wiſhed for, but until their induſtry helps them to the means of buying one ſlave and ſo on till they get

more

An AGGREGATE and VALUATION of EXPORTS of PRODUCE from the PROVINCE of GEORGIA,

With the NUMBER of VESSELS and TONNAGE employed therein, annually distinguished, from the Year 1754, to 1773. Compiled by *WILLIAM BROWN*, Comptroller and Searcher of his Majesty's Customs in the Port of *Savannah*.

	Square rigged Vessels.	Sloops and Schooners.	Vessels.	Tonnage.	Barrels of Rice.	Indico.	Deer Skins, raw and dressed.	Beaver Skins.	Raw silk.	Tanned Leather.	Tobacco.	Timber of all kinds.	Staves of all Kinds.	Shingles.	Oars and Handspikes.	Plantation Turpentine.	Pitch.	Tar.	Rosin.	Hides and Skins.	Canoes.	Flour.	Rough Rice.	Pease.	Sago Powder.	Orange Juice.	Tallow.	Bees and Myrtle Wax.	Horses.	Mules.	Stock and Cows.	Value of Small Articles not enumerated in the Table.	Total Value in Sterling at current Prices.
	No.	No.	Tot.	No.	No.	Lbs	Lbs.	Lbs.	Lbs.	Lbs.	Lbs.	Feet.	M.	No.	Bar.	Bar.	Bar.	Bar.	Bar.	No.	Buſh.	Lbs.	Buſh	Buſh	Lbs.	Gal.	Lbs.	Lbs.	No.	No.	£.	£.
from 5th Jan. 1753, to 5th Jan. 1754.	9	43	52	2699	4508	69995	1201	438	38259			3838149	2931125	2606500				45	20	40	76	660		237	460							16	26	15744
Jan. 1754, to Jan. 1755.	7	35	42	2799	2497	9358	39820	387	1168	6035		2823131	1961162	2630000	88			300	120	620		200		420	200			500		150	53	46	32	16776
Jan. 1755, to Jan. 1756.	11	32	43	2559	3910	32855	1208		358	9837		2701961	1822661	1764000	2200			129						732						200			1	8633
Jan. 1756, to Jan. 1757.	4	17	21	665	2371	9600	5791		358	10350		3023	68330	628881	1138				55	22				200										2613
Jan. 1757, to Jan. 1758.	13	35	48	1981	2602	555	7381	622	734	12030		2726660	1028350	8085801	1282			83	35	8	14			1700				290	95			100				12694
Jan. 1758, to Jan. 1759.	7	30	37	1746	16376	12098	552		1746	32425		2836561	850000	5320001	1121				450	8	14							206							20826
Jan. 1759, to Jan. 1760.	9	36	45	1622	4666	1552	13140		60	338	21775	3070850	50569	6066600	2243	760	2	235	274	37				271			4584	1050	24	2			15830
Jan. 1760, to Jan. 1761.	22	35	57	2784	6529	9233	4285		1260	380	77200	4274040	2251077	6852260	1833			246	302	38	70	2280		776	430			3845	5120	1800	40			6	27021
Jan. 1761, to Jan. 1762.	34	58	92	4791	7700	8784	18475		940	952	106601	4779836	3645156	8272200	2587		21	253	275	167	11	320		406	623					1760	65			51	47552
Jan. 1762, to Jan. 1763.	38	70	113	5681	6890	14151	172402		54	587	58005	7413531	4232853	8061151			10	309	254	78	740	6756		2533	460		316	512	840	279		32	69	37025
Jan. 1763, to Jan. 1764.	54	94	148	7681	12224	16010	200600	1666	711	34475		8874161	6161.12	3742050	528			286	394	141	1360	7805		3213	300			2170	209		69	318	71426
Jan. 1764, to Jan. 1765.	60	86	154	8047	14357	14366	277400	1221	1084	37120		8270043		2870000	85	506	723	754	76	965	4527	2893	14	1280	200	1262	1300	1351	20	32		60	56649
Jan. 1765, to Jan. 1766.	77	109	186	10420	7773	8647	60170									268	40	138	971	190	600	2190		1221	273		2972	660	272	3137	270		37		9228
Jan. 1766, to Jan. 1767.	87	96	183	9276	18700	23901	388870	2095	32	3064	3031	16361	4.0	6.76	2869691	91	1600	103	80	105	521	639	600	1359		7064	601	18405	605	1079	4058	345	30	25	24	40	8638
Jan. 1767, to Jan. 1768.	73	113	186	10122	20100	20	1063	1469	1447	1800	1.6	4.9	2.9	1.6	2.9	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	9938
Jan. 1768, to Jan. 1769.	84	122	206	9563	25235	56000	370600	5281	436	48505	34875	2195	1.6	2.3	2247590	30	1470	45	193	202	408	418	216	11952	7300	13564	96	12930	1770	498	2666	63	21	30	125	10095
Jan. 1769, to Jan. 1770.	87	96	183	9276	18700	23901	388870	2095	32	3064	3031	16361	4.0	6.76	2869691	91	1600	103	80	105	521	639	600	1359		7064	601	18405	605	1079	4058	345	30	25	24	40	8638
Jan. 1770, to Jan. 1771.	73	113	186	10122	20100	20	1063	1469	1447	1800	1.6	4.9	2.9	1.6	2.9	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	1.6	9938
Jan. 1771, to Jan. 1772.	64	122	205	9563	25235	56000	370600	5281	436	48505	34875	2195	1.6	2.3	2247590	30	1470	45	193	202	408	418	216	11952	7300	13564	96	12930	1770	498	2666	63	21	30	125	10095
Jan. 1772, to Jan. 1773.	84	133	217	12246	23540	1882	213475	638	425	52220	27772	2263502	585798	3585930	90	1400	384	598	628	555	874	12446	1000	26271	1401	14435	2284	19564	2571	201	1360	300		12167

Of the above Aggregate the Port of SUNBURY exported last Year £. 20,876.

* N. B. *The sudden Increase and Decrease of several Articles in certain Years are owing to Difference of Prices, accidental Shippings before or after the New-Year, good and bad Seasons, or Indian Hunts; and Care has been taken to distinguish the real Produce from such fortuitous Circumstances. The RICE from 1772 to 1773 amounted to 96,266 l. 9 s. DEER SKINS, raw and dressed, to 18,740 l. 8 s. 11 d. and LUMBER of all Kinds to 12,634 l. 7 s. 2 d. There is added to the Value of every Year 30 l. upon an Average for a Gain in the Islands of at least 200 per Cent. on Shipping, and 75 per Cent. on Plan*

BEFORE me ANTHONY STOKES, Barrister at Law, Chief-Justice of the said Province of Georgia, personally appeared, WILLIAM BROWN, Esquire, Comptroller and Searcher of the Port of Savannah, in the said Province, and made Oath, That the above Aggregate is true, according to the best of his Knowledge and Belief; which Oath was taken before me, the first Day of March, 1773.

ANTHONY STOKES.

It is to be observed that the first ninth Year of the above Aggregate amounts to 47,551 l. and the second being 121,677 l. is nearly equal to two and a half Times the first; so that in the third ninth Year (anno 1782) by an Increase in the same Proportion, the Exports must amount to 300,000 l. though much more may be expected if we reckon geometrically; especially if we consider the great Bodies of uncultivated Swamp Lands still remaining in the Province, and near four Millions of ungranted Acres of Indian Hunting Grounds, ceded anno 1773. Of the rice upland Soil as any in America, and exactly adapted for raising Cotton, Tobacco, Hemp and Indigo. In short, Georgia may be justly deemed one of the most flourishing Colonies in America. In the Year 1772 a Gentleman upon the Island of Skid-away, ten Miles below Savannah, cleared 50 l. sterling by ten Negroe employed in planting Indigo; and there is almost an equal Profit to be made by cutting Lumber, which, from its being strongly impregnated with Turpentine, resists the Worm and Weather better than the Pine of the more northern Colonies; in Consequence of this it is in great Demand in the West-Indies. As to Indian Corn, its common Produce in the Lowlands is from forty to fifty Bushels per Acre; and up the Country, from sixty to seventy Bushels; but though there is also great Benefit to be reaped by cultivating Rice, &c. only the wealthier Sort of People can attend to it, on account of the Number of Slaves, and the great Apparatus necessary for that Business. The Floridas may be regarded in the same Light with Georgia, allowing for the State of Infancy.

more it will be vanity for them to hope for an accumulation of wealth.

Do we not ſee Solomon's words fully verified in Negroes? *A ſervant will not anſwer though he underſtand.* The very perverſe nature of this black race ſeems to require the harſh treatment they generally receive, but like all other things, this is carried into the extreme; far be it from me to approve or recommend the vile uſage to which this uſeful part of the creation is ſubjected by ſome of our weſtern nabobs, but againſt the Phyllis of Boſton (who is the *Phænix* of her race) i could bring at leaſt twenty well known inſtances of the contrary effect of education on this ſable generation.

Treachery, theft, ſtubbornneſs, and idleneſs, the firſt in the more northern Negroes, and the three laſt in the *Ebo*, *Angola*, and *Benin* ſlaves are ſuch conſequences of their manner of life at home as to put it out of all doubt that theſe qualities are natural to them and not originated by their ſtate of ſlavery.

Had *Monteſquieu* been well acquainted with the American colonies, he would not have made uſe of any argument ſo much below ſo great a man as the one quoted in the above named enthuſiaſtical production, which ſeems calculated to procure a greater number of vagabonds than we are already peſtered with. I think no man ought to be allowed the manumiſſion of his ſlave except he be bound for his good behaviour and induſtry, and idle free blacks ought to be ſold for the good of the community.

The anecdotes of the ſublimity of Negroes ſentiments

ſentiments in their own country are very ſimilar to my anecdote of a ſavage ſhooting himſelf becauſe his mother reprimanded him, or another doing the ſame becauſe he loſt his all at play.

Mr. *Le Poivre* has mentioned the making ſugar in *Cochin China*, by free men, but it has not been obſerved, that thoſe free men make ſmall quantities, and ſell it at the low rate they do, only becauſe others who employ ſlaves in the ſame or in the adjacent countries, ſell them at that price, which may be eaſily proved, and conſequently oblige the others to do the ſame; nor that theſe free men live on the ſame diet as our ſlaves, and who will ſay that *Cochin* Chineſe ſugar after exportation ſells at a more reaſonable rate than Javan, Martinique, Jamaica, or any eaſtern or weſtern ſugar does.

Have not all the endeavours of the ſeveral Legiſlatures in the Weſt Indies to introduce more white or free people proved abortive, by reaſon of their general inability for labour in thoſe climates?

Is it not therefore better to employ thoſe, who labour at a ſimilar work in their own ſultry country, and in a ſtate of ſlavery too, than to make victims of men who can by no means be qualified for the fatigue of a ſouthern plantation.

We have known not long ago ſugars &c. as cheap in the Weſt Indies as in the Eaſt; it is the increaſe of conſumption in Europe and North America that renders it dear: I affirm that in America, neither ſugar, rice nor indigo can be made by whites at three times the price it is made now by the blacks, and i alſo affirm that the Weſt India lands are diſtributed among all nati-

ons with leſs reſervation, than they are on the continent of Britiſh North America.

Can any one ſay that the favourites of mankind (i mean liberty and property) are any where enjoyed in Africa?

The rhapſodical opinion that the earth produces more when worked by free men than by ſlaves may do in theory but not in practice; the contrary is eaſily made to appear; and i am certain from the nature of the climates, that the ſame colonies when cultivated by free men would not produce one tenth part of what they do now; as for an equal diſtribution of property it is like Harrington's *Oceana* or Sir Thomas More's *Utopia*.

An European will outlive a Creole by means of his more regular life, not otherwiſe, and who knows not that Negroes attain with all their labour a much higher age than the generality of idle Whites.

The fooliſh argument of the ſhortneſs of the Jewiſh hiſtory, as well as lugging in the practice of Polygamy by the head and ſhoulders (although the text quoted is not to the purpoſe) is too mean to be refuted.

Let not therefore the narrow ſyſtem of morality adopted by ſome of our contemporary enthuſiaſtical Philoſophers reſtrain us from properly uſing this naturally ſubjected ſpecies of mankind; the impoſſibility of an European's bearing the requiſite labour in thoſe climes is now ſo well aſcertained as not to require any elucidation, nor can any one pretend to ſay, that the poſterity of Europeans born in the torrid Zone ought to bear its inclemency; what labour can we expect from men brought up in eaſe and affluence? It is pretended

that

that our employing ſlaves is contrary to the precepts of the founder of our moſt holy religion, when he ſays: "*Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour as thyſelf*;" i need not make uſe of the confined ideas of the antient Jews, who thought that the title of neighbour did not extend to any thing beyond their own nation.

I will then affirm, that there is a fivefold ſtate of ſlavery, not only known or permitted; but commanded in God's holy word.

1ſt. Thoſe who are condemned to ſlavery for their crimes, which we but too often experience to be the caſe with the ſlaves imported to us from Africa.

2ly. Thoſe that are taken in war, which is the moſt general way among the Negroes to furniſh us with ſlaves, and who would be murdered; did we not induce their conquerors by our manufactures and money to ſhew them mercy.

3ly. Thoſe who are ſold by their Parents, which cuſtom obtains among many people even the refined and civilized Chineſe, not to mention ſome chriſtians, but moſt among the Negroes.

4ly Thoſe who ſell themſelves or are ſold for debts, or other wants, which not only the Negroes, but our own laws juſtify.

5ly Thoſe who are born in ſlavery.

I need not ſeek aſſiſtance from the laws actually in force among us to prove the firſt; *Noah* in *Geneſis*, chap. 9, v. 25, 27, condemns *Ham* to ſlavery for the crime he had committed, and in *Exodus*, chap. 22, v. 3, God commands us that, "If the Sun be riſen upon a thief, it ſhall unto "him be a crime of blood, for he ſhould make "full reſtitution, if he have nothing, let him be

"ſold

" ſold for his theft." Here let me remind my reader, how much eaſier the ſlavery of our Negroes is, than the cruel captivity of thoſe, who for their miſdemeanors are condemned to the chain, the wheelbarrow or the gallies.

For the ſecond read *Joſhua*, chap. 9, v. 23.

Does not *Exodus*, chap. 21, v. 7, ſhew, that a man might ſell his child as a ſervant, only giving the maid ſervant a privilege above men ſervants?

In the fourth caſe i think that (without leaving the point in view) i may aſk, does not the ſoldier ſell his liberty to his ſovereign or other Prince for his pay be it for a time or for life?

Proverbs, chap. 11, v. 29, tell us, " That " the fool ſhall be ſervant to the wiſe of heart." Chap. 22, v. 7, " The rich ruleth over the " poor and the borrower ſhall be ſervant to the lender." Does not Jeſus himſelf, Math. chap. 18. v. 25 make uſe of a parable fully to my pur- " poſe? when he ſays: But for as much as he " had not to pay, his Lord commanded him to be " ſold, and his wife and children and all that he " had, and payment to be made."

Exodus chap. 21, v. 4, tells us that; " if the " maſter have given his ſervant a wife, and ſhe " have born him ſons or daughters, the wife and " her children ſhall be her maſters.

For the perpetuity of ſlavery read *Leviticus* chap. 25, v. 39, to 47, how abſurdly is *Monteſquieu* again quoted, when in his L. 10, C. 3, he ſpeaks of a conquered nation, who through neceſſity are made ſlaves in their own country: every one knows that ſuch conquered people, who are ſuffered to remain at home at firſt under oppreſſion, ought by degrees to be made free

ſubjects,

ſubjects, their good behaviour being their ranſom; but who, even among thoſe refined moraliſts, would emancipate his ſlave without ſome reward either private or publick?

How *Tacitus* comes to be ſo pat to the purpoſe of this acute Philoſopher i have not been able to learn; nor is the quotation from the univerſal hiſtory, or Mr. Robertſon of any more force: Since we are able then to get ſlaves in a lawful manner, why ſhould we now be reſtrained from buying them to cultivate our grounds, when all nations at all times have enjoyed that privilege?

Had not the well known Chriſtian Doctor of the Coloſſian Church a ſlave called *Oneſimus*? did not this ſlave run away (after having, as uſual with ſlaves, robbed his maſter) come to Rome and go to ſee St. Paul? Paul treated him kindly, inſtructed, converted, and baptiſed him and ſent him back to his maſter with a letter full of godly eloquence to perſuade *Philemon* to forgive his ſlave and re-eſtabliſh him in his favour, but by no means an exhortation, much leſs an order to ſet him free.

It is not religion then nor chriſtian charity that forbids us to have ſlaves, but it commands us the duties we are to fulfil towards them, inſtructing them to obey us, and us to uſe them as a part of the reaſonable creation.

Who knows not, that the Spaniards are ſo much ſlaves that they can not well be more ſo, were they bought by their King: And who, that is acquainted in the Spaniſh dominions, knows not, that a modern Iberian does himſelf more honour by ſaying (*Soi Blanco*) i. e. I am a white

white man, than if he exclaimed, i am Noble!

Shall after what i have ſaid, this Rhapſodiſt with his confined ideas, ſend us to ſome modern ſyſtem of religion, or ſay, that i have offered any thing contrary to the ſublime doctrine of the author of chriſtianity? Had this anonymous writer inſtead of playing with the word ſlavery, told us, that the Northern colonies had no occaſion for Negroes, he would have ſaid more, than all he has advanced in his futile publication.

A Negroe at the Miſſiſſippi is reckoned to bring in his maſter an hundred dollars per annum, beſides his ſhare towards all the proviſion conſumed in the family; Negroes in general are uſed with more lenity there than in Carolina.

I have in my diſſertation on the origin of the ſavages, which has ſwelled beyond my intention, made mention of a peculiar characteriſtic of the Negroe ſpecies, here let me be allowed to mention that they, like all others of the different ſpecies, and varieties of the human genus are born white, which colour ſoon changes, but on the moment of birth in both ſexes the exterior parts of generatiou will ſhew, whether the perſon will be black, yellow, brown, red or any other colour known among mankind.

There is among the Negroes a kind of anomalous beings with white ſkins, feeble eyes, &c. which have been ſo often deſcribed by other authors that i ſhall not trouble my reader with a particular account of them; yet one obſervation i cannot forbear to make, which i believe will be found no leſs curious than new:

Through all the Northern America the red men are univerſally ſo, but as ſoon as we come

on

on the *Iſthmus* we find ſome of thoſe unhappy anomalous individuals among the ſavages; i have myſelf ſeen ſeveral of either ſex of this forlorn kind among the *Sant Blaſs* nation, who call themſelves *Ayomalas*; they inhabit the South Eaſtern part of the *Iſthmus*, and i underſtand from others converſant farther South, that in South America it is common; theſe people are of ſuch an exceeding tender texture of ſkin, that it is diſagreeably fair and very liable to become ſcurfy and freckled; their eyes are nearly as red as thoſe of a white rabbit and very weak, ſeeing objects plainly only after Sun ſet, before Sun riſe, or in a cloudy day: Their hair is ſtraight, long, lank, and red, not participating of the harſh ſtrong texture of the hair of common ſavages; their inability for labour, for want of ſight, cauſes the others of the nation to ſupport them; the offſpring of theſe poor creatures however is again red and in the general courſe of nature.

The manners and way of life of the white people in Florida, differ very greatly from thoſe in other provinces of America, particularly in reſpect of cloathing; they are very plain, their dreſs conſiſts of a ſlight waiſtcoaſt of ſtriped cotton, and a pair of trowſers of the ſame, and often no coat; if any, it is a ſhort one of ſome light ſtuff; in winter a kind of ſurtout, made of a blanket, and a pair of Indian boots is all the addition; the women alſo dreſs light and are not very expenſive; happy frugality! May the inhabitants of this bleſſed climate long continue to cheriſh thee as their greateſt temporary bleſſing! Manufactures of cotton for their own uſe alſo prevail greatly among the induſtrious Acadians;

may

may the new comer under the free government of the Engliſh not be aſhamed to follow this excellent example! ſorry i am though, that i find myſelf obliged to ſay that when in anno 1772 i was in Orleans i could not forbear to feel the weight and juſtice of an exclamation made by a French gentleman to me upon ſeeing ſome Engliſh gentlemen walk upon the *Levis* "* *Dites moy Monſieur* (ſays he) *leſquels ſont les petits maitres de la Louiſiane Meſſrs. les Anglois ou nous autres*, with grief i was obliged tacitly to own the Engliſh were.

The amazing plenty of the country in its weſtern regions makes them keep princely tables at a ſmall expence, thus i can not call this luxury a fault; to form an idea at what a good table may be furniſhed, i beg my reader to peruſe the following account, as this really ſtood in the year 1772 in the months of November and December, and in January and February 1773: Beef at 13ſ6. per hundred; freſh pork of the beſt corn fed 18ſ. per hundred; country flour from 12ſ. to 13ſ6. the North American flour 15ſ6. to 16ſ6. per hundred; a buſhel of good clean full grained Indian corn about 13d. ½; a barrel of the beſt clean merchantable rice being about two groſs hundred weight of neat grain, from 9ſ. to 11ſ3; ſweet potatoes about 8d. per buſhel; a ſheep of about 12 pound per quarter, if purchaſed above New Orleans, will coſt 6ſ9, if below, 9ſ; a tame gooſe of the beſt kind from 10d. to 1ſ; a turkey about 20d. to 2ſ; if a very fine wild one, ſome times 2ſ6; a common dunghill

* Tell me Sir, which of us are the Petits Maitres of Louiſiana the Engliſh or we.

fowl about 6d; a tame duck from 6d. to 8d; veniſon variable according to the caprice or nation of the hunter, but always very cheap, this has a noble peculiar fine flavour here; butter is little uſed, yet the beſt the Acadians make which is very good ſells at about 6d. $\frac{3}{4}$; bears oil carefully clarified ſupplies its place; this is bought at about 3/6 a gallon; and in my opinion, as well as in the opinion of all who once try it, richly deſerves the pre-eminence of butter; beſides theſe the lakes *Pont-Chartrain*, *Maurepas*, *Borgne*, and *Ouachas* ſupply the country with a vaſt variety of excellent fiſh at an exceeding low price, and in winter large quantities of fine oyſters and a great choice of water game in high perfection, ſo low as ſeldom to be aſked more than 6d. for a gooſe, about 4d. for a duck, mallard, widgeon, or other of that ſize, and about 2d. for a teal;* all theſe have here a peculiar flavour and are much admired; the river abounds likewiſe in fiſh, but being very deep and little pains taken to catch them, the different kinds are ſcarcely known; the planters all keep their hunters for providing their tables, and their yards abound in poultry; ſmall game, ſuch as quails, pheaſants, hares, ſquirrels, ſnipes, godwits, curlews, meadow larks, fieldfares, rice birds, &c. &c. are very frequently had.

It is true that *Penſacola* and *Mobile* eſpecially the firſt are not ſo abundant; but in regard of meat, veniſon and fiſh, i pronounce it to be owing to the indolence of the inhabitants, who con-

tent

* All theſe prices are as near as poſſible reduced out of the country currency into ſterling.

tent themſelves to pay any price fixed thereon by one or two butchers, and three or four induſtrious Spaniſh hunters and fiſhermen.

Mobile has plenty of bread kind already, and notwithſtanding the barren miſerable appearance of the ſea coaſt here and at *Penſacola*, their fine rivers will e're long oblige propitious plenty to rear her at preſent hidden head.

In reſpect of vegetables, from *Mobile* weſtward there is an amazing ſupply of every kind the year round in their higheſt perfection and of the fineſt flavour; but the barren ſand of *Penſacola* will not admit of gardening in June, July, and Auguſt, the proportion of moiſture being then too ſmall for that of heat.

In the gardens we find various kinds of cabbage and ſallading, carrots, turnips, radiſhes, ſkirrets, leaks, ſcallions and other roots, aſparagus, artichoakes, cucumbers, green peaſe (in ſome the year round) vaſt variety of beans, and choice of beſt flavoured pot herbs, in ſhort every fine eſculent plant Europe can boaſt of, they have beyond deſcription perfect, neither has the bounteous hand of nature here been ſparing in the moſt delicious fruits for the table, nor forgot to ſtock the fields and woods with fine muſhrooms, truffles and morels for the moſt exquiſite ſauces.

Hic ver aſſiduum atque alienis menſibus æſtas
bis gravidæ pecudes; bis pomis utilis arbos

VIRG.

Happy climate where through all ſeaſons of the year the ineſtimable gifts of *Flora* and *Pomona* are common, where ſnow or ice are very ſeldom ſeen,

and

and where the cruel neceſſity of roaſting one's ſelf before a fire is utterly unknown!

With reſpect to drink, among the Engliſh inhabitants it is generally water tempered with a moderate quantity of the beſt Weſt India rum, and among the better ſort the Portugueſe and Spaniſh wines; the French drink their favorite claret of the two kinds called *vin cahor* and *vin de ville*; the Spaniards add the *St. Lucar* wine to it, New England rum (that bane of health and happineſs) has found its way here alſo, among the lower claſſes; a low kind of rum from the French Iſles is likewiſe uſed by ſome, and its cheapneſs makes it preferred for the trade with the ſavages.

A tranſition to the agriculture of theſe colonies comes moſt naturally in courſe; this ſcience (undoubtedly the moſt noble and moſt uſeful of all employments) has not only had the protection and countenance of Monarchs and other great men, but they have even practiſed it, our preſent gracious Sovereign has ſhewn inſtances of his care of the art, and many individuals of rank in England, Holland and France now practiſe it and ſtudy its improvement, and the annals of all nations tell us, that the flouriſhing ſtate of that art was the happy period of their grandeur; and it undoubtedly is and always will be an honourable, innocent, pleaſant, and uſefull purſuit.

The amazing multiplication of mankind in America, which ſince eighteen years that i have been acquainted with the continent has proceeded nearly, if not wholly, in a triplicate proportion, is entirely owing to this great art, and to the room this wide waſte of new world affords for its improvement; this art is the ſource of our grandeur

deur, and the cauſe of our happy ſtrides to greatneſs; the welfare of the people depends thereon, all the conſequence of a nation is owing to it, and the national independency of the greateſt comunities is in a great meaſure inſeparable from it.

In this noble country then (which will afford not only all the neceſſaries but even the ſuperfluities of life) it ought therefore to be the principal object of our moſt arduous purſuits; all the products of the torrid Zone as well as of the temperate are capable of being produced in this perfect climate, let us ſee which of them moſt deſerves our attention.

Before i deſcend to particulars a thought claims my notice; Weſt Florida is beyond meaſure happy in having its fertile ſoil more equally divided than the barren ſands which were choſen by the* monopolizers of Eaſt Florida; theſe even overlooked the moſt uſefull places there, and planted their baronies in the pine barrens. There let the lords be lumber cutters! The fertile part of Weſt Florida is more equally divided, and there population through agriculture does and muſt continue to flouriſh, happy circumſtance! for which Dr. Stork and the ſelf taught Pennſylvanian Philoſopher deſerve our perpetual thanks.

I. Wheat will always be produced in Weſt Florida eſpecially in the higher latitudes on the river, ſo that all attempts to ſtarve that country by blockade would be vain and fruſtrated; barley, and oats grow well in all the lighter ſoils, and rye may be produced in the moſt barren ſands of the province. The

* No doubt this was a ſcheme of the enemies of American population who ſee themſelves every way baffled.

The cultivation of theſe are ſo univerſally known, that to deſcribe them would be ſpending paper in vain, but a remark in regard to wheat (which has fallen under my obſervation) muſt not be omitted; in the lower latitudes wheat will grow exceeding well till it comes almoſt to maturity; but then of a ſudden a diſeaſe called the blaſt will often take it, and this in one night reduces the hopes of a fine crop into a certainty that the beſt thing to be done next morning is to burn the ſtraw to clear the ground for ſome thing elſe; to prevent this an obſervant farmer of my acquaintance in Georgia * having found that rye was never ſubject to this diſeaſe, mixed ſome rye among his wheat, and the field eſcaped the blaſt; he repeated the trial till he was convinced of its efficacy, and then ſowed a field of about five acres with wheat, ſurrounding it with a liſt of about twenty feet of rye; he ſucceeded in this experiment alſo, and his repeated trials have now ſhewn that it may be depended upon as efficacious, and thus wheat may be truly made an univerſal grain.

II. The *Zea*, Maize or Indian corn is a grain by no means to be neglected; the rich grounds in the N. W. parts of Eaſt Florida about *Alachua* &c. and the lands in the N. E. of Weſt Florida are peculiarly adapted thereto and will yield fifty or ſixty buſhels per acre, the intervale on the *Tombechbè* and the land on the Miſſiſſippi is capable of producing eighty buſhels per acre; even the ſandy land, or that which is little better than ſand, will yield according to ſeaſons from fifteen to twenty five buſhels an acre.

The vaſt conſumption of this grain in food for mankind is very well known, but its ſuperior

* Mr. Iſaac Young,

rior goodneſs for the feeding of ſwine, poultry, and indeed all animals, joined to its eaſy culture and prodigious increaſe, makes it deſerve a rank before all other grain after wheat: Its culture requires the ground to be thoroughly hoed* or plowed, ſo as to make it entirely mellow, and break every clod, then holes are made at equal diſtances in regular rows, and four or five grains dropped in each and covered; in this part of the huſbandry the greateſt miſtake is often made through over greedineſs of land, the holes ought to be at the regular diſtance of five feet, which will leave room for the horſe or hand hoeing it much better, than if it was placed at four feet; ſome people are ſo near minded as to plant them only three feet a part, but this prevents the free circulation of air through the rows, of which this grain ſtands very much in need; this is ſo evident, that on planting in the ſame field ſome corn at three, at four, or at five feet diſtance, (ſuppoſe the ſoil equally good) there will be a difference of ſix feet in the height of the plants, for the beſt land can not raiſe the crowded corn to above ten or twelve feet, whereas that through which the air has free acceſs, is frequently raiſed to ſixteen, eighteen, and even twenty feet; † nor is this the only difference, the crowded corn will not produce grain in any thing like the proportion of that which ſtands at proper diſtances; a ſtem of crowded corn will hardly ever furniſh above three ears, and theſe not above eight inches long,

* The ſavages anciently performed this with the ſhoulder blade of animals fixed on ſtaves.

† I write for Florida.

long, nor have they their extremities ever filled; neither are the rows ſo compact nor cloſe together as that of corn that has enjoyed more freedom; a ſtem of which will produce generally from three to five well grown ears from nine to twelve inches long, compact, and to the end full grown and of a wholeſome look; when the young plants are grown about five or ſix inches out of the ground, a man ought to go through the field, and pull up thoſe plants that look leaſt promiſing leaving only three plants in each hill and the ground muſt be kept weeded; when at the height of a foot or thereabouts, it muſt have the firſt hoeing, the earth is then to be drawn round upon the root in form of a cucumber hill; and now it may ſtand till it attains the height of three feet, when it muſt have a ſecond hoeing, and be cleared of ſuckers, which will appear in numbers; when the grain is got to the growth of about ſix or ſeven feet, or when the taſſel or female flower begins to appear, it muſt again be relieved from ſuckers, and have a third hoeing, throwing the ground well up round its foot; in a large field theſe hoeings are moſt commodiouſly performed by the hoe-plow drawn by one horſe, but in new fields the hand hoe muſt aſſiſt, if not do all the work; all the trouble with which this culture ſeems burthened is amply repaid by this grateful grain, the time of ripening depends on the climate; the northern climes bring it tardily but the ſouthern ones haſtily.

After this third hoeing the ſpike or male flower will appear in perfection; you may now ſtrip ſome ſuperfluous leaves from the lower part of the plant which will prove excellent hay for a horſe

and

and ſome cows that are neceſſary to keep near the houſe; the corn having attained nearly its growth and the ſpikes not ſhewing any more *pollen*, which is the impregnating yellow duſt, that is ſeen on it during its flowering ſtate, we find the female flower or ſilken taſſel change colour; the ears fill and ſome lower leaves begin to fade, it will not be bad huſbandry to cut off all the tops above the uppermoſt ear; this is left two or three days to dry on the ſummit of the plant, then tied in ſheaves, it is as fine a hay as any known for feeding ſuch animals as are intended to be kept about the farm yard, or in the ſtable, and every prudent planter will find it his intereſt to keep ſome milch cows (at leaſt) at home; this lopping of the tops is alſo ſaid to contribute to the filling of the ears and the ſooner ripening of them: the corn ripens in four or five months from the planting, in Florida; the gathering is done by pulling the ear from the ſtem, and carrying it in baſkets to a place where it is ſtript of all its huſk except the inner coat, and then it is kept in ſome airy loft or granary: and when wanted for uſe, it is laid in heaps and threſhed with flails, and afterwards winnowed like other grain.

A report has been ſpread that on the Miſſiſſippi it was only neceſſary to burn the canes, make a hole in the ground and put the grain in, and it will grow without culture; it is true, but leſs wiſe men than Solomon will know ſuch a field at ſight to be that of the ſluggard, and know the owner by his ſhabby appearance.

To enumerate the vaſt variety of ways in employing this noble grain for food ſuch as *hommany*, muſh, groats, parched flour, cold flour, pud-

dings, *Anagreeta** and a multitude of other diſhes, that vary in the difference of ripeneſs, grinding or other ways of dreſſing it, would be too tedious and unfit for this work; however the mixing its flour in equal parts with wheat flour after macerating the firſt in water till the liquor becomes ſlightly acidulated makes ſo fine a bread that i could by no means think it juſt to forget the mention of this proceſs, the meal coarſly ground and cleared of bran, then boiled with a little ſalt in water, and thus mixed with wheat flour, makes alſo a palatable bread of great uſe to the poor; i hope my reader will excuſe this prolixity, ſo great a ſtaff of life deſerves ſome notice.

III. Peaſe, as they are here called but improperly, becauſe ſpecies of the *Phaſeolus* and *Dolichos* are meant, follow the maize in utility: It is well known that moſt people uſe them like European peaſe either green or dry, and ſome kinds, ſuch as the ſmall white ſort, the bonaviſt, cuckolds increaſe, the white black eyed pea, the white crowder, and many others, are undoubtedly at leaſt as good; add to this that while young, hull and all, they make a fine eſculent diſh for the table, and when hulled they are as good as green peaſe, and as much admired; the hulls after threſhing are eagerly ſought after by cattle, and increaſe milk, the hogs fattened with this pulſe are the next beſt pork to thoſe fed with maize; thus they infinitely increaſe the quantity of food; their culture is eaſy, they are generally

* Anagreeta is the corn gathered before maturity, and dried in an oven or the hot ſun by which means it retains its ſweetneſs and is eaſily dreſſed, making a fine mixture in puddings eſpecially with peaſe, but this is only practiſed in the provinces of New York and New Jerſey.

generally now planted between the corn at the ſecond time of hoeing; they want little or no attendance in that caſe, as the corn ſerves them for ſupport to climb up by, and the further attendance on the corn alſo ſerves the crop of peaſe; i can not but think this huſbandry a very good one as by the time that the *Cirrhi* take hold of the corn it is ſufficiently filled to be out of all danger of hurt from this paraſitical nature of the peaſe. I alſo believe that the haulm left behind ſupplies the land with ſufficient manure to re-eſtabliſh its vegetative vigour, which maize is but too apt to exhauſt.

The proper pea is not ſo fit for the field in this part of America, therefore only cultivated in gardens for the purpoſe of eating them green.

IV. The eſculent *convolvulus*, *vulgo*, ſweet potatoe, claims the next place in this liſt; this root is by agriculture meliorated ſo much that ſome of the varieties are by no means inferior to any food we uſe on the ſouthern tables, although ſome palates, for inſtance my own, can hardly accommodate themſelves to them; the following liſt will point out the varieties, in an aſcending ſcale for goodneſs.

1ſt. *Spaniſh*, or the original root.

2d. *Carolina*, little ſuperior to the firſt.

3d. *Brimſtone*, from its internal colour, with a red ſkin.

4th. *Purple potatoe*, having that colour throughout except a very little of the heart.

5th. *Bermudas*, or round white potatoe.

The 1ſt. 4th. and a few of the 5th. are cultivated in the Floridas.

The 1ſt. is ſcarce fit for the table being very fibrous, therefore moſt proper to feed cattle; how-

ever

ever pork from hogs fed with them is indifferent, and requires to be hardened a conſiderable time with corn; it is remarkable that in pork fed with them the fat always ſeparates wholly from the lean, which is likewiſe the caſe with that fed on the common peruvian potatoe, vulgarly called the Iriſh.

The 4th and 5th are excellent food and deſerve a place on every table; the 4th cut into longitudinal ſlices and fryed is a very good diſh; plainly boiled they are a good *ſuccedaneum* for bread.

The 5th being leſs ſweet and more dry than the others are beſt for ſtewing with meat, ſuch as fat pork or beef, or a fat gooſe or duck, to make what is called an *Haricot*; their very mealy texture renders them the moſt proper in room of bread, or to mix with flour and make bread of.

They are a profitable crop, and require a light ſandy ſoil which muſt be made very clean and mellow; they are planted in beds or hills, being propagated from pieces that have what is called an *eye* in them; they require two or three hoeings, and with this management will produce from three hundred to five hundred buſhels per acre; even the laſt, if we reckon ten hills neceſſary to make a buſhel.

About July, in rainy weather, ſlips are taken from them, and planted in beds to procure a crop of ſmall ones for next years ſeed.

The very ſame treatment is here neceſſary for the peruvian potatoe, but it wants oftener covering becauſe the heat of the ſummer ſun would ſtrengthen the poiſonous juices (with which this genus of night ſhade abounds) in thoſe that might be expoſed to the air; therefore they are

unfit

unfit for the field in this climate, nor will they bear to be kept any time but in the garden; they will yield ſix or eight crops yearly, of a very good kind for the table.

V. Buckwheat juſtly deſerves the next rank, it being the moſt fattening grain to all animals, but eſpecially hogs and poultry; which laſt are always ſurpriſingly multiplied where this grain is raiſed; to man it is alſo an excellent food; it is well known that in *Philadelphia* buckwheat cakes are one of the articles of that city at their breakfaſts; it is alſo a noble crop near an apiary, and will multiply honey greatly; it requires a light loamy ſoil well broke, and to be ſowed very thin, it improves land where ever it is planted.

VI. The *panicum* or Guinea corn is next in this ſcale of the produce of the earth; it differs from maize in being more difficult to be reduced into food, and being of too hot a nature for brutes, eſpecially poultry, who will become blind by eating it often; it impoveriſhes land, but when ſown at broad caſt will yield a fine and profitable crop of hay for ſuch as are inclined to keep horſes or milch cows near home, nor has it in this caſe ſo bad an effect on the ſoil.

VII. Rice though ſo lucrative a commodity did not deſerve an earlier place in this enumeration, becauſe it is not properly a neceſſary article in the human Œconomy in this country but a ſtaple branch of trade, not likely to increaſe the number of profitable members of ſociety; however notwithſtanding it is (for our uſe) only fit for puddings, and to put in ſoops, or to make the wafer-like bread called journey cakes in Carolina, yet it muſt be mentioned here on account

of

of its uſefulneſs in feeding Negroes, cattle and poultry.

Its culture is in wet grounds, where in the dry ſeaſon it is ſowed in drills eighteen inches apart and kept very clean, firſt by hoeing, and afterwards by letting water on juſt ſufficient to deſtroy the weeds, and not to drown the rice by covering its top; for rice will grow in any ſoil though it loves watery ones beſt; but the reaſon of letting water on is more to ſuppreſs other plants than to forward the growth of rice; for the crop graſs and other weeds are kept under by being covered; cover the rice and you will alſo deſtroy it; and i have ſeen good crops in high lands, when the ſeaſon was but moderately wet; it is therefore to ſave labour that the planter chuſes wet ground, but ſhould he not have the water at his command, the noxious growth in dry weather, or a profuſion of water in wet weather, would equally deſtroy the crop; it is therefore neceſſary that great banks and deep ditches ſhould be made to ſecure the crop, and that is no work for new planters to begin.

The grain in the rough is very noble food for all quadrupeds and poultry; to manufacture it there is a great deal of labour neceſſary; when manufactured a quart per *diem* will very plentifully feed a working Negroe, and the duſt, beaten huſk &c. that comes off will cauſe all animals on the plantation to be very fat, eſpecially turkeys, which no place on earth furniſhes equal to thoſe on a rice plantation; it will require eighteen or twenty buſhels of rough grain to make a manufactured barrel of 500 pounds weight: The time of planting is from the end of the froſt

to

to the 10th of June, and the ſeaſon for reaping is generally in October; a ſecond crop will riſe fit for fodder. In the twelve mile ſwamp in *Eaſt Florida* i have ſeen a ſecond crop come to perfection, and no doubt in the grand marſh in latitude 25, 30, in that province it would always yield twice.

An acre will produce from ſixteen to eighteen hundred pound weight, manufactured grain, and one Negroe will attend three acres in a very compleat manner.

This grain cauſes a great conſumption of cypreſs and pine wood to be made into caſks; conſequently a great deal of coopers labour is neceſſary, in which the planter ought to be obliged to employ white men, it not being harder labour than is conſiſtent with our temperament and conſtitution.

The proceſs of manufacturing rice in a great meaſure reſembles that of peeling barley; the planter who has water at command manufactures by a water mill, conſequently cheaper than he who is obliged to do it by horſes or by the manual labour of his ſlaves.

This grain has one great article in its favour, that is the number of hands it employs in tranſporting and exporting it, who may be truly ſaid to live by it.

The machines for manufacturing it have been ſo often deſcribed and figured, that they hardly ought to be introduced into a work that bears the name of conciſe.

VIII. There is no doubt but *beans* would be found of uſe, were they cultivated on the ſtrong clay grounds which are at ſome diſtance from

from the Miſſiſippi, and ſuch as the lands on the ridges of the *Yaſoo*, and in the Chicaſaw nation; but as long as the canes, reeds, and the numberleſs natural graſſes are in ſuch abundance, this article is not yet worth attending to, any more than crops of turnips, carrots, or cabbage, which however would undoubtedly anſwer here for culture in the field as well as in any other part of the earth.

IX. The artificial *graſſes* found here are 1ſt: That kind of graſs known in the iſlands by the name of dog graſs, and in Carolina and Georgia by that of crop graſs, and by the French of Florida *chiendent*; this ſo greatly reſembles the *annual meadow graſs*, that i would rank it as one of that claſs; its leaves are broader; this riſes naturally after the ground is broke up and will continue in the ground for two or three years, when the ground being again plowed up, a freſh crop enſues, and this is all the culture it wants; in Carolina and Georgia, this is apt to plague the planter much by reaſon of its continual renovation, and the ſtrong matting of its roots whereby it renders the ſurface of the earth in a great meaſure impenetrable to the hoe, wherefore they wiſh to deſtroy it; but in places where paſture is ſcarce and eagerly deſired, they would do well to conſider its excellent quality in fattening cattle, and the fondneſs all cattle ſhew for it; and if inſtead of trying clover and other foreign graſſes, which have ſo often baffled their utmoſt efforts, they would encourage this eaſily cultivated graſs by plowing their pooreſt grounds once in two years, they would ſoon find themſelves amply repaid by their long wiſhed for *deſidera-*

tum

tum, paſture; this graſs will grow kindly in the pooreſt ſoils of Florida.

2dly, A ſecond ſpecies of the ſame kind with narrow leaves called by the French *Herbe au cheval*, from the fondneſs of horſes for it; in Carolina it is called *nutt graſs* from a nutt found at its root; this, when once it takes in the ground, is as eaſily entertained as the firſt and makes a very good paſture on poor ground, but it muſt be well fenced againſt hogs, which being very fond of the nutts would root all up in a ſhort time.

It may be ſaid that i deſcribe theſe graſſes as natural yet call them artificial, but when we reflect, that they require ſome kind of culture, the name of artificial can not be thought improper.

3dly, A graſs not ill reſembling *ſilver hair graſs*, which is called from the colour of its ſeed, black ſeed graſs, makes an excellent paſture on the meaneſt ſand we find in the country; the ſeed is eaſily procured in Carolina, Georgia and Eaſt Florida.

4thly, *Scud graſs* vulgarly called Scots graſs is a noble graſs on poor land, it grows to the height of thirty inches and upwards;* an experiment made by Mr. *Wegg* at Penſacola convinces me that this graſs will grow in the ſandy land of the provinces; the ſeed or plant may be procured at Jamaica where i knew a gentleman of the name of *Jones* make 1500l. per annum of a penn by means of

* In wet lands in Jamaica it will grow four or five feet high though the ſoil be ſandy. It is propagated by cutting it in pieces, leaving a joint to each piece, this ſtuck into wet ſwampy ground ſoon grows and propagates others, ſo that it becomes a very cloſe matted ſod; i have ſeen it called *gramen panicum*.

of this graſs alone: Cattle prefer it to every other.

5thly, The *Panicum* and maize are of uſe as graſſes i have already ſhewn how.

6thly, A ſpecies of *Dolichos* lately introduced into Georgia from *China* although not properly a graſs, yet as it thrives to admiration there and yields four or five crops per annum, i think it not improper to recommend, as deſerving cultivation for feeding cattle, the more ſo as all kinds are fond of it.

7thly, Experience has taught us that *ſain-foin*, *lucerne*, *clover* and *timothy graſs* thrive not in the eaſtern part of theſe provinces, the ſun being too hot for them in ſummer, at which ſeaſon clover in particular can not reſiſt it out of the ſhade; on the weſtern part of Weſt Florida i believe they might anſwer, but we need not yet look out for paſture there, while that noble graſs *Indian reed (canna)* is ſo abundant.

X. *Sago* might be here produced as well as in Georgia, for the tree from which the baſis of this drug is taken abounds particularly in Eaſt Florida; every body knows of what a vaſt uſe it is.

XI. *Seſamen* or oily grain, This was introduced by ſome of the Negroes from the coaſt of Africa, into Carolina, and is the beſt thing yet known for extracting a fine eſculent oil; it will grow in any ſandy ground, even luxuriantly, and yields more oil than any thing we have as yet any knowledge of: Capt. P. M'Kay of Sunbury in Georgia, told me that a quantity of this ſeed ſent to Philadelphia, yielded him twelve quarts per buſhel; incredible as this may appear, i have the greateſt reaſon to believe him; the firſt run of this oil is always tranſparent, the ſecond

cond *expreſſion*, which is procured by the addition of hot water, is muddy, but on ſtanding it will depoſit a white ſediment, and become as limpid as the firſt; this oil is at firſt of a ſlightly pungent taſte, but ſoon loſes that and will never grow rancid even if left expoſed to the air; the Negroes uſe it as food either raw, toaſted, or boiled in their ſoups and are very fond of it, they call it *Benni*.

All the culture it requires is to be ſown in drills about eighteen inches apart and by frequent hoeings to be kept clean.

XII. The *ground nut* alſo introduced by the Blacks from *Guinea*, is next after this for its eaſy cultivation, a good kind of oil that does not ſoon grow rancid, and the great quantity it yields; but the earth does not produce the ſeed in ſuch plenty as the laſt, and it takes up more room.

XIII. The *pumpkins* as cultivated in the fields here, being of an eaſy culture in the pooreſt ſoils, and yielding a great and beneficial increaſe of food, ſhould not be forgot, although on account of their being chiefly uſed as a ſauce i have given them this late place; their culture is ſo eaſy as to require little or no attendance after the ſeed is in the ground; they overgrow every kind of graſs or weed, and are generally planted by dropping ſome ſeeds in the potatoe or corn fields, and their increaſe is immenſe; was the ſhield ſhaped ſquaſh from the north added to this, it would prove a beneficial addition; all theſe kinds are eagerly eaten by horſes and cattle of every ſort, and they increaſe milk.

XIV. Liquor is as neceſſary as victuals; i

would

would therefore recommend the culture of *vines*, which will here ſucceed with certainty; aſk the French inhabitants and they will tell you, that they once were in a very fair way to make their own wines at leaſt, until an order for the ſuppreſſion of the vineyards came from France; the remains of theſe vineyards in many places yet ſhew the practicability of this ſcheme; the Spaniards continue the proſcription, but why ſhould not we make this profitable uſe of a country, whoſe ſoil and climate are evidently inviting us to this attempt, and which experience has taught us are adapted to it?

XV. *Apples* and *pears* are here of very good quality, but are never likely to become an object of attention by growing in quantities ſufficient to make cyder and perry; but peaches grow here of the fineſt flavour, and in the higheſt perfection, on ſtandard trees, and therefore are fit to be planted in orchards. It is well known that hogs fattened by them make an excellent pork; the ſuperfluous quantity would not be ill employed in that way, but as in Virginia they have ſet us the example, why can we not in Florida alſo diſtill their juices, and by means of that ſpirit which becomes excellent by age, at leaſt partially baniſh the money draining uſeleſs article rum? This tree ſhould be grafted not ſo much on account of the choice of fruit (Florida produces no indifferent ones) as becauſe the tree in this climate, eſpecially in ſandy ſoils, is not ſo laſting when raiſed from the nut as when grafted on its own or any other proper ſtock.

XVI. *Sugar* is a matter at preſent of mere ſpeculation, yet it is made already near *Orleans*, although

though acknowledged not to yield the profit of a rice or indigo plantation. At or near *New Smyrna* ſome is alſo produced, and rum has been made there. Some of the lands between the latitude 25 and 27, would undoubtedly yield it to advantage particularly at the river *Rattones* and the grand marſh.

We gather from *Horace* and *Virgil* that ſevere froſts were common in their time at *Rome*; now ice is ſcarce known naturally there; ſo while i have been acquainted with New York government, which is about ſeventeen years, it ſeems to have altered its climate four or five degrees more ſouthward;* of this we have many ſtriking proofs; this being owing to the opening of the country it is not unlikely but in time, by clearing the woods of Florida, that country may be brought to produce ſugar to advantage, till then its culture merits no place here.

XVII. *Oranges* of various kinds are worth notice as they are on many accounts uſefull in drink and ſauces, and their leaves a good fodder for ſome eſculent animals, ſuch as ſheep, rabbits and goats; they thrive extremely well throughout all Florida.

XVIII. *Olives* are as yet a matter of ſpeculation, but as the wild olive is found here, and the cultivated one has already ſhown its propenſity to a naturalization in this country, i make no doubt but they will become a grand article here; their utility is ſo well known that it requires no comment;

* The later appearance of froſt and the earlier arrival of ſpring, but above all, the viſits paid of late years by ſome ſpecies of ſouthern fiſhes to New York harbour, ſuch as the *mullet*, *porgy* and ſome others are evident proofs of this.

comment; their culture can not yet claim room in this work.

XIX. * Hops grow ſpontaneouſly through all this country.

XX. Having now gone through moſt of the different eſculent productions of the earth, i will examine the merits of thoſe which are ſerviceable in commerce, be they for manufactures or otherways; and among theſe *indigo* juſtly calls for the firſt rank.

The deſcription of this plant will more properly appear in the botanical part of the work.

For its culture it requires a middling rich looſe ſoil, and the field ought to be as nearly as poſſible a perfect level; it will grow in any ſoil from the heavieſt to the lighteſt, but rich hammock, or oak land, of a moiſt nature, is the beſt adapted to this purpoſe; the ground ſhould be thoroughly cleaned, and reduced to a perfect garden mould; this is the moſt laborious part of the

* In ſome of the Swediſh provinces, a ſtrong kind of cloth is ſaid to be prepared from hop ſtalks; and in the tranſactions of the ſwediſh acadamy for the year 1750 there is an account of an experiment made in conſequence of that report. Of the ſtalks, gathered in autumn, about as much was taken as equalled in bulk a quantity of flax, that would have produced a pound after preparation. The ſtalks were put into water and kept covered therewith during the winter: in March they were taken out, dried in a ſtove, and dreſſed as flax. The prepared filaments weighed very nearly a pound, and proved fine, ſoft and white; they were ſpun and woven into ſix ells of fine ſtrong cloth. The author Mr. *Schiſsler* obſerves, that hop ſtalks take much longer time to rot than flax; and that if not fully rotted, the woody part will not ſeparate, and the cloth will neither prove white nor fine.

Dr. Lewis's notes on Neuman's chymiſtry 4to, London 1759, page 429.

the culture, and ſo abſolutely neceſſary that no crops can be expected without it.

Seed of the beſt kind abounds on the Miſſiſippi, about four buſhels of ſeed are requiſite for an acre, it muſt be ſown in drills about two feet apart; the time of approaching rain is always beſt; the ſeaſon for ſowing ſets in the beginning of March and may be continued down till May; if the ſeaſon is any thing favourable it will afford five cuttings between March and November; ſeven weeks being a long allowance between each two cuttings; we muſt be very cautious about cutting, for if that be done in dry weather it will infallibly deſtroy the plant; but in rainy weather there is no manner of riſque of this; by this treatment and care, the plant is continued for years together in the warmer climates; it ought to be cut as ſoon as there is any appearance of bloſſom, ten weeks from planting will generally ripen the ſeed perfectly; when cut, it is tied in bundles and carried to the vats.

The vats are three in number and ought to be, the firſt very large, the ſecond one third leſs, and the third yet leſs: At the head of the large vat ſtands a pump to fill it with water; theſe vats particularly the firſt or ſteeping vat, ought to be made of very hard timber; in this ſteeping vat the weed is thrown together, and preſſed down with pieces of live oak or other ſolid and ponderous timber; it is then covered with water by means of the pump; here it remains to ferment; the *criſis* whereby to know the exact time it is to remain in this vat is when the liquor thickens, begins violently to effervesce and aſſumes a purpliſh blue colour; this will be effected in a greater or leſs

ſpace

ſpace of time from eight to twenty hours according to the temperature of the atmoſphere.

The ſteeping vat projects with one edge about three feet over the ſecond or beating vat; in this edge the bottom of the firſt has a hole and plug in it, this plug muſt be drawn as ſoon as the above ſigns of the perfection of fermentation appear, to draw off the liquor from the weed, which laſt is abſolutely uſeleſs; except perhaps it might be employed to good purpoſe in a ſaltpetre manufacture.

In this ſecond or beating vat as ſoon as the liquor is in, it muſt be beat or ſtirred by a proceſs ſimilar to churning; this is a laborious work and uſed to be performed by Negroes, who draw up and down a lever that has either one or two bottomleſs ſquare buckets at each end; but of late horſes have been employed in large works; this churning is continued till the dying particles are ſeparated from the liquor, or as it were ſufficiently congealed to form a body or maſs; here lies the ſecret of the art, for if the beating is ceaſed too ſoon a part of the dying matter remains undiſſolved, and if beat too long ſome part will again diſſolve; only experience can teach this *criterion*, and there is only one method to try it which is by taking up ſome of the liquor in a phial or cup and obſerving whether the dying matter is inclined to depoſe itſelf or not; all farther theoretical leſſons are in vain, the young planter muſt have recourſe to practice.

Lime water is in the Engliſh colonies uſed to haſten the ſeparation, this i am inclined to believe ſpoils the indigo, neither the French, Dutch, nor Spaniards uſe any in their plantations.

The

The indigo being arrived at this criſis the churning ceaſes, and it is left to ſubſide at the bottom of the vat; when the liquor begins to look of a faint green tranſparent colour the water muſt be drawn off, firſt by a cock fixed at a certain height in the ſide of this ſecond vat, till you come near to the ſuperficies of the *Reſiduum* which is the indigo; then another cock correſponding with the third vat muſt be opened to let the *Reſiduum* run into this laſt vat, where it remains to ſettle a little longer in order that it may totally diſcharge itſelf of all the tinging matter,* it is then put into bags of the form of *Hippocrates's* ſleave to drain it from all ſuperfluous humidity; theſe bags muſt hang in the ſhade.

When all the water is drained from it, the remainder, which has all the appearance of mud is put into very ſhallow boxes, where it is left to dry; when it begins to have the conſiſtence of clay fit to make brick with, it muſt be cut with a very thin bladed knife into ſquare pieces, and then further left to become quite dry, which is the ſtate in which indigo comes to us.

This laſt proceſs muſt be all done under a ſhed where the air has free acceſs but the ſun none; ſhould the ſun touch indigo in this ſtate, it would exhale all the tinging matter and leave the maſs in a colourleſs ſtate, ſimilar to ſlate in appearance; beware alſo of moiſture for that will keep it diſſolved and incline it to putrefacton.

Some planters preſs their bags in a box of about

 ſix

* This will be compleatly depoſited in about 8 or 10 hours time, the Reſiduum muſt be ſtrained through a horſe hair ſieve, previous to its being put into bags in order to have it entirely pure and free from extraneous matter.

ſix feet long three feet wide and two deep, having holes in the bottom to let the water off, and a ſtrong thick board fitting exactly in it; in this box the indigo bags are laid and the board with a number of weights on it, but whether this method is better than hanging them in a ſhed to dry i know not.

I ſhould have obſerved, that in the drying ſhed the pieces muſt be carefully turned three or four times a day, and that two young Negroes with a buſh, wing, or bunch of feathers, ought to be employed in fanning the flies out of the drying ſhed, as they are hurtful to indigo; be cautious alſo in packing it in barrels not to put it in till it is thoroughly dryed.

The dimenſions of a ſet of vats in Carolina is about ſixteen feet ſquare, and three feet deep, in the clear, for the ſteeper; and the battery twelve feet ſquare and four and a half feet deep for every ſeven acres of indigo; they make them of two and a half inch plank of cypreſs, and the joints or ſtuds of live oak; to theſe the planks are well ſecured by ſeven inch ſpikes; ſuch a ſet will laſt ſeven or eight years.

The beſt indigo is called *flotant* or *flora*; this is light, pure and approaching to hard; it floats on water, is eaſily inflammable, and is almoſt totally conſumed by fire; the colour is a fine dark blue inclining to violet, and by rubbing it with the nail it aſſumes the colour of old copper.

The next beſt is more ponderous, and is called violet or *gorge de pigeon*, its colour being alluded to; theſe two are beſt for dying or ſtaining linen and cotton.

The third kind is of a copper colour deriv-

ing

ing its name from the coppery appearance it exhibits on being broke; this is the weightieſt of all the merchantable indigo, and therefore the *deſideratum* of the planters; and is moſt uſed for the woollen manufacture.

The inferior ſorts are not worth deſcribing as they are unſaleable and unfit for uſe; they diſcover themſelves by flintineſs, or a muddy ſoft crumbling appearance accompanied by a dull blue colour, often appearing even like ſlate.

An indigo work ſhould always be remote from the dwelling houſe on account of the diſagreeable *effluvia* of the rotten weed and the quantity of flies it draws; by which means it is alſo ſcarce poſſible to keep any animal on an indigo plantation in any tolerable caſe, the fly being ſo troubleſome, that even poultry thrive but little where indigo is made; nor is there ſcarce a poſſibility to live in a houſe nearer than a quarter of a mile to the vats; the ſtench at the work is likewiſe horrid: This is certainly a great inconvenience, but it is the only one this profitable buſineſs is ſubject to.

XXI. *Cotton* being ſo very uſeful a commodity that ſcarce any other exceeds it, and an article of which we can never raiſe too much (for like all other things, the more it is multiplied the more its conſumption increaſes) it therefore behoves me to mention it as ſecond in rank: We, by following the example of the induſtrious Acadians, will do well to manufacture all our neceſſary clothing in Florida of this ſtaple, and although it has not yet been raiſed in a ſufficient extent to export a conſiderable quantity thereof, yet when we conſider the number of manufactures in Lan-

caſhire

caſhire, Derbyſhire, and Cheſhire that conſume this benificial commodity either alone or in mixture with ſilk, wool, flax, &c. and that England imports all the rough materials from abroad (chiefly from the Levant) to ſo great an amount as near 400,000 l. ſterling value, we may perhaps find it worthy of a more univerſal propagation; i ſhall, in hopes that this may take place, give the method of culture and of cleaning this produce of our earth.

The natural hiſtory of the plant and its characters, ſpecies and varieties will be found in the botanical account.

Cotton will grow in any ſoil, even the moſt meagre and barren ſand we can find.

The ſort we muſt cultivate here is the *Goſſypium Anniverſarium* or *Xylon Herbaceum*; alſo known by the name of green ſeeded cotton, which grows about four or five feet in height. Give this plant a dry ſoil and further it will coſt you little trouble or attention; it muſt be planted in rows at regular diſtances about ſix feet apart; plant the ſeed in rainy weather and in about five months time the fibres will be compleatly formed and the pods fit to gather, which will be known by their being compleatly expanded; it muſt now be carried to the mill of which take the following deſcription.

It is a ſtrong frame of four ſtuds, each about four feet high and joined above and below by ſtrong tranſverſe pieces; acroſs this are placed two round well poliſhed iron ſpindles, having a ſmall groove through their whole length, and by means of treddles are by the workman's foot put in directly oppoſite motions to each other; the

workman

workman ſits before the frame having a thin board, of ſeven or eight inches wide and the length of the frame, before him; this board is ſo fixed to the frame that it may be moved, over-again, and near the ſpindle; he has the cotton in a baſket near him, and with his left hand ſpreads it on this board along the ſpindles which by their turning draw the cotton through them being wide enough to admit the cotton, but too near to permit the ſeed to go through, which being thus forced to leave the cotton in which it was contained, and by its rough coat entangled; falls on the ground between the workmans legs while the cotton drawn through falls on the other ſide into an open bag ſuſpended for that purpoſe under the ſpindles.

The French in Florida have much improved this machine by a large wheel, which turns two of theſe mills at once, and with ſo much velocity as by means of a boy, who turns it, to employ two negroes at hard labour to ſhovel the ſeed from under the mill: One of theſe machines i ſaw at Mr. *Krebs* at *Paſca Oocooloo*, but as it was partly taken down, he claiming the invention was very cautious in anſwering my queſtions, i cannot pretend to deſcribe it accurately; i am informed that one of thoſe improving mills will deliver ſeventy or eighty pounds of clean cotton *per diem*.

The packing is done in large canvas bags, which muſt be wetted as the cotton is put in, that it may not hang to the cloth and may ſlide better down; the bag is ſuſpended between two trees, poſts or beams and a negro with his feet ſtamps it down; theſe bags are made to contain from three hundred and fifty to four hundred weight; with

about

about twenty ſlaves moderately working a very large piece of poor ground might be finely improved ſo as to yield to its owner a fine annual income by means of a ſtaple which is much in demand in England, and here is raiſed by no means inferior in whiteneſs and fineneſs as well as length of fibres to that of the *Levant*.

XXII. The *Mulberry*, deſerves our next notice for a two fold cloathing it provides us with.

Among my botanical articles the reader will find the deſcription of one of this claſs, which i have all the reaſon in the world to believe to be the *Morus papyrifera* and which i have on *page* 20 *of this volume* diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Morus foliis palmatis, cortice filamentoſa, fructu nigro, radice tinctoria.*

This tree is found in abundance in the North Weſtern parts of Florida: The chactaws put its inner bark in hot water along with a quantity of aſhes and obtain filaments, with which they weave a kind of cloth not unlike a coarſe hempen cloth; i would propoſe to boil the bark in a ſtrong alkaline *Lixivium*, by which means i make no doubt but a very fine and durable thread of the nature of cotton, flax or hemp might be obtained; the root of this ſame tree likewiſe yields an excellent yellow dye: But i ſhall here treat of the article, which is moſt commonly known to be produced by means of the mulberry tree, this is ſilk: A very ſhort time about ſix weeks in the year will ſuffice for all the labour requiſite to acquire this valuable article, and that labour is ſo light as only need children to attend it

The gathering of the leaves being the moſt laborious part of the work i would adviſe the ſowing

ing the ſeed as it were at broad caſt, ſo that it may ſpring up in form of wide hedges of about ten feet breadth leaving a lane of two feet between each pair, by this treatment the leaves may be gathered by means of a pair of ſheers or if the hedges are narrower the hand may do it, without the diſagreable neceſſity of climbing trees, which is always more or leſs attended with ſome danger, and as this is a female buſineſs, with indecency.

I am convinced mulberry buſhes will grow thus and yield abundance of leaves and therefore this method is eligible before groves or orchards, which take up much room and have a dirty effect during the fruit ſeaſon.

All the ſpecies of mulberry trees grow kindly in Florida and ſome people pretend the white kind to be beſt, but on my ſtricteſt enquiries i could not find in what manner this affects the worms, but i would have the ſilk planter be very cautious if he has one kind in his nurſery, ſtrictly to baniſh the other, becauſe this change of leaves is certainly the reaſon of ſome of the diſeaſes attending the worms: The remainder of the ſilk culture is no more than to keep the worms well fed, and the apartment where they are kept thoroughly clean; when they begin to acquire a certain tranſparency, the period of their ſpinning or reſolving themſelves into a *Chryſalis* is at hand; then it is neceſſary to put up bundles of ſome ſlight thin twigs between the ſhelves. The *wild* or *dogs fennel* affords a ready and proper material for it; here the worms will naturally enough mount upon and pitch on a place where to metamorphoſe themſelves into a cocoon; in Georgia we have a filature, likewiſe at Puryſburg; but as there are none in Florida i will ſub-

join

join the following account of its preparation for the manufactury.

1ſt. The cocoons are to be put into an oven juſt hot enough to deprive the *Chryſalis* it involves of life, without hurting, the fibres of the cocoon: A heat ſomething below *Fahrenheits* ſcale for boiling water will effect this: without this precaution the inſect eats its way out and deſtroys the thread of ſilk.

2dly. It muſt then be put into a copper with water juſt on the boil and kept ſo, this will diſcharge the glutinous matter from the cocoon and diſcover the end of the clew; then taking ſeveral of theſe ends together they are gently reeled off, and afterwards ſpun and prepared for the loom.

This proceſs is hurtful to the elaſticity and ſtrength of the ſilk, though it does not deprive it of its gloſs: Therefore if we could attain the knowledge how the raw ſilk is managed in the *Levant*, it would be the moſt eligible way; all we know about this is, that it is performed without hot water: this is called raw ſilk and comes in bales to England and other manufacturing countries.

The refuſe cocoons either damaged by the inſect or other ways, are carded in Europe, and are then improperly ſtiled raw ſilk; this ſhould not be confounded with the above named from the *Levant*, being by no means equal to it. After the ſilk is reeled off, we find ſome irregular coarſer kind on the inner diviſion of the cocoon; damaged cocoons are mixed with this, as alſo the inner diviſion next over the *Chryſalis*, after being ſteeped in warm water to diſſipate its gelatinous parts; this mixture is carded and called *floretting*.

All

All theſe carded ſilks looſe their luſtre by that proceſs.

Of this commodity there is at preſent imported into Baitain

* From Spain and Italy to the value of	£. 1, 500, 000
† From Turkey, the Eaſt Indies, and China,	400, 000
£. Sterling	1, 900, 000

This account ſhews ſufficiently how beneficial this buſineſs would be to America, would we by our induſtry in a very light labor try to oblige England to let this money circulate here inſtead of among Spaniards, Italians, Chineſe, and Turks; which is by no means impoſſible, ſince the bounteous hand of nature has furniſhed us with the requiſite plant among the number of thoſe that are indigenous in Florida.

XXIII. The *Carthamus Tinctorius* or ſafflower is likewiſe found among the indigenous plants in the weſtern part of Florida; this uſeful dying weed requires but little cultivation, and well deſerves our attention in that country.

XXIV. *Hemp* and *flax* (according to a very ingenious performance‡) Britain imports from the Baltic annually to the value of 500,000l. ſterling; another great encouragement for Florida; neither Carolina nor Georgia have any lands comparable

* Thoughts on the times, and the ſilk manufactory 8vo. page 7, anno 1765.

† Political eſſays concerning the preſent ſtate of the Britiſh empire, 4to. page 191, London 1772.

‡ Muſeum Ruſticum, vol. 1, page 457.

comparable to our fine lands on the Miſſiſſippi, and yet they have already exported conſiderable quantities of hemp, and thus ſet Florida an example well worthy of imitation; the lands are ſo rich on the Miſſiſſippi, that neither of theſe two impoveriſhing plants will exhauſt them, therefore let us apply ourſelves to this cultivation, which is ſo univerſally known as not to need deſcription; thoroughly pulverizing the earth, and not ſowing it too thick are almoſt the only things to be attended to in its cultivation, and the proper criterion of rotting the *ligneous* parts of the plant, ſo that they may be eaſily ſeparated in the brake, is the only one of moment in preparing it for embarkation.

Add to this, that ere long we ſhall have extenſive ſettlements producing immenſe quantities of materials for exportation on and near the banks of that almoſt unbounded interior ocean the Miſſiſſippi, for three thouſand miles up it; not to mention the products of the river *Ohio*, the *Shawaneſe*, *Ouabache*, *Hogoheegee*, *Yaſoo*, *Miſſouri*, *St. Peter*. *St. Francis*, and the red and black rivers with many others of inferior note, all emptying themſelves in it, where there is ſo much room for the increaſe of people; which always proceeds in proportion as there is more ſpace for them to ſit down in, this is beyond reply verified by ſo amazing a rapidity of increaſe as America has experienced within theſe twenty years, being no leſs than in triplicate proportion. Now it is evident, that to carry off the produce of this vaſt tract, it will be neceſſary to build ſhips in every part of it which together with their bulky commodities muſt be ſold abroad, as very few

ſmall

ſmall craft will be ſufficient ro bring up the trifling returns the inhabitants of this happy country may ſtand in need of; this being the caſe let us conſider that timber, iron, lead, &c. are found up this river, but without rigging and ſails they cannot conſtitute a ſhip; likewiſe we muſt recollect, that rigging and ſails are bulky articles and would coſt much for carrying up ſo immenſe a diſtance. Think not reader, that these are chimerical ideas, by no means; every part above named has already in ſome degree experienced more or leſs the effects of the induſtrious ax and hoe in the hands of the Herculean ſons of America.

There is a very ſtrong kind of fibre called Indian hemp in Florida; i would recommend an inquiry into what it is; the ſavages uſe it and i am perſuaded we ſhould find it worth improving.

The uſe of flax is too wellknown and its neceſſity ſo evident, that a deſcription or recommendation of its culture and preparation would be ſuperfluous.

The North American *Annona*, the *Lime*, and *Mahoe* tree; all indigenous in Florida, yield each a ſerviceable bark of great uſe if properly manufactured.

XXV. *Tobacco* is a ſource of great riches in this country; the French have proved that this plant may be produced in great quantities and of the beſt quality; this may be made an article of great emolument eſpecially as that trade is exceſſively on the decline in Virginia and Maryland, but if we cannot keep it clear from the multiplicity of incumbrances it is ſaddled with in thoſe colonies, ſuch as a trade by factors and many etcæteras

which

which makes its value to the planter very inconſiderable, i would rather cultivate none; it is a rank luxuriant, impoveriſhing vegetable, requiring a deep rich ſoil ſuch as the Miſſiſſippi alone affords here; therefore it will undoubtedly thrive; its culture is almoſt identically the ſame as that of the *Zea*, but i would adviſe the planting it further apart, ſuch as ſix feet at leaſt; the only material thing this culture differs in, is becauſe the ſeed being exceedingly diminutive in ſize it muſt be ſown in beds of rich new ground, which has been well manured, with the aſhes of the bruſh cut off from it; from hence it is tranſplanted in regular rows at the above named diſtances: In about three weeks time it will be advanced to the growth of a foot: Now the firſt hoeing takes place, and ſuckers and worms begin to appear; from both theſe the plants muſt be carefully cleared.

The plants are at this period out of danger of being ſcratched out of the ground by a large flock of turkies which may now be turned into the field, who will not touch the plants but carefully look for the worms that infect them, of which thoſe birds are very fond; and thus they will ſave a great deal of labour, but the ſuckers muſt be attended to by human labour, which is alſo required to keep the ground clear from weeds; when the plant attains the heighth of eighteen inches it muſt be deprived of its head and ſtripped of its lowermoſt leaves, reſerving a few with their heads on for ſeed: In about eleven weeks after they are tranſplanted the plants ceaſe growing and the leaves aſſume a variegated colour of different green ſhades; this is an indication of their matu-

rity;

rity; they are then cut and laid in heaps to ſweat for about ſixteen hours; next day they are carried to a ſhed, ſo conſtructed as to admit a free circulation of air through every part thereof, but well covered againſt rain; this is the practice in Virginia; in ſome countries they keep all the light out except where the rays cannot immediately reflect on the tobacco; in this ſhed they are hung with their tops downwards for about ſix weeks; then taking advantage of a day when the atmoſphere is pretty much loaden with moiſture, they are laid on a kind of floor of poles, and left to ſweat for about ten or twelve days; now the leaves are ſtripped off and the tops kept ſeparate from the middle and the lower leaves; the uppermoſt leaves being the beſt tobacco and the lower the worſt; they are then made up into very cloſe packed bundles called in Florida *Carrots*, which are held together by a ſtring of bark; there are at preſent but two ſorts produced viz *Nanquitoche* and *Pointe coupée*, the firſt infinitely ſuperior to the ſecond.

XXVI. Pitch, tar and turpentine being the produce of vegetables will not improperly come in here; the proceſs of making the common tar is by ſplitting the heart of the pitch pine, fallen down (with which the ground is covered in the eaſtern and ſouthern parts of Florida) into ſmall ſticks of the length of about three feet, and arrange them into a kiln of a circular form; but as this is a proceſs hardly to be learned by theory, i will recommend it to the inquiſitive reader to inform himſelf at a tar kiln great or ſmall, which are a very common occurrence thoughout this continent,

Sometimes

Sometimes this kind of tar is made of pine knots without ſplitting.

The green tar has not yet been made in Florida and until i gave ſome account of the proceſs to ſome of the planters there, it was intirely unknown in the country.

This is made from trees that have been tapped for turpentine, and continued running for about three years, by chopping the bark off by degrees to twelve or fifteen feet high; they are then cut down and ſplit into ſmall ſticks; and the tar is made by the ſame operation as the common ſort.

Notwithſtanding the great quantities of pitch pine in Florida, turpentine has not yet been made there; even in February 1773 when i was at *Orleans*, there being a neceſſity for ſome turpentine on board of the veſſel (in which i came from thence) the Captain was obliged to pay ſixteen dollars for a half caſk of it, and i have been informed, that even then it was ſold in that town for medicinal uſes at a great price by the pint and quart.

The proceſs is very ſimple; a hole is cut in the tree on the ſide moſt expoſed to the ſolar rays (in large trees two of theſe may take place) theſe holes are cut ſlanting downwards leaving the bottom concave and large enough to introduce a calebaſh to dip out the gum, which depoſits its ſelf in the bottom of the hole; this hole is called a box, and the turpentine is dipped out of it and put in caſks: Florida, eſpecially the Eaſtern and Southern parts, has the advantage for this buſineſs of the more Northern provinces by not being tied down to any particular ſeaſon, the climate admitting of this work the year round.

Pitch

Pitch is in this country generally made by burning the tar in the clay hole into which it runs from the kiln but i would recommend the uſe of a ſtill for this purpoſe, which is agreeable to the practice in Sweden and Germany; by this means a very valuable eſſential oil is ſaved which ariſes in the boiling; this oil is called *Oleum pini* or *Oleum tædæ.*

It is of great uſe with painters, varniſhers &c. on account of its drying quality, it ſoon becomes thick of a conſiſtence like balſam: Along with this oil comes over a watery liquor, which the workmen injudiciouſly throw away; it is a good acid ſpirit, capable of being applied to ſundry uſeful purpoſes: *Neuman* ſays he knew a perſon in France, who had ſaved by it ſeveral thouſand dollars.*

Reſin commonly called *Roſin* is beſt made by diſtillation alſo, a conſiderable quantity of oil would be obtained, and the expence of a ſtill would be amply repaid by theſe ſavings.

As pitch and tar are often uſed to pay roofs of houſes &c. and the addition of red lead &c. made uſe of, which has proved ineffectual, and as the ſame obſervation takes place with regard to ſhips bottoms, were water (as does air in the former caſe) corrodes the pitch, i think it not improper to inſert the following note of the ingenious Dr. Lewis on Neuman's chymiſtry: " An anonymous cor-
" reſpondent of the Swediſh academy obſerves,
" that the tarred or pitched boards or ſhingles,
" with which houſes in many places are covered
" are ſoon damaged by the heat and moiſture,
" the ſun's heat melting off the tar ſo that the
" wood remains bare. Some have endevoured to
" prevent

* Neuman's chymiſtry 4to. page 288, London 1759.

" prevent this, by laying on the tar late in the " year, that the winter's cold might fix it; an " expedient of ſome uſe, but very far from " being effectual, for however the tar may be " hardned by the winter, the return of ſummer " ſoon makes it ſoft again. Others have mixed " ſmith's cinders with the tar, which inſtead of " mending the matter makes it worſe, all pon- " derous ſubſtances do the ſame. He ſays, he " has never found any addition comparable to " coal duſt (that of charcoal he ſeems to mean) " which is to be ſtirred into tar made hot in ſuch " a quantity as to make it thick: The mixture " is to be laid on with wooden trowels in a hot " day: tar thus prepared, he ſays, is fixed, ne- " ver runs, binds and hardens ſurpriſingly from " heat and moiſture and ſhines better than oil " varniſh."

Pitch burnt in a cloſe furnace, ſo that no ſmoak eſcapes cauſes a ſoot to ariſe, which is the lamp black ſo much in uſe.

The laſt quoted gentleman in the ſame page * favours us with the following annotations: As i think other words than his own, cannot be ſo deſcriptive of any proceſs whatever, i hope my reader will excuſe theſe quotations:

" What is called lamp black (originally per- " haps the ſoot collected from lamps) is obtain- " ed in different parts of Germany, Sweden, &c. " not from pure reſin or pitch, but from the " dregs and pieces of bark of the trees ſeparated " in their preparation, for making common reſin, " the impure juice collected from inciſions in " pine and fir-trees is boiled down with a little

" water

* Neuman's chymiſtry 4to. page 289, London 1759.

" water, and ſtrained whilſt hot through a ſack,
" on cooling the reſin congeals upon the ſurface
" of the water, and is then packed up in bar-
" rels; it is diſtinguiſhed according to its color,
" into white, yellow and brown. The droſs left
" on ſtraining is burnt for lampblack in a low
" oven, from which the ſmoke is conveyed by a
" long paſſage into a ſquare chamber, having an
" aperture in the top, upon which a large ſack
" is faſtened: the ſoot concretes partly in the
" ſack, which is occaſionally removed, and part-
" ly in the chamber and canal, from which it is
" ſwept out."

XXVII. *Gum elemi* is a reſin fit for many medicinal uſes, and the product of a ſpecies of *Piſtachia*, very common in the ſouthern and ſouth-eaſtern parts of *Florida*; the wood in itſelf is not valuable, but as the gum is one of thoſe articles, that are generally brought to England in a ſophiſticated ſtate: this tree is worthy our attention, and may prove a ſerviceable article to the country; but this is not the only uſe of this tree, it is very uſeful for cattle either in dry ſeaſons in the ſouthern part of the country, or for ſuch as are kept up at the farm yard, they are very fond of the leaves of this tree, which are a wholeſome food, increaſing milk, and keeping cattle in a thriving condition.

XXVIII. A ſpecies of tree greatly reſembling the poplar is found in *Weſt-Florida*, which produces, if not the *Tacamahaca*, at leaſt ſomething of the reſinous kind ſo extremely like it, that it is not diſtinguiſhable from it; i am told, that the reſin is obtained by digeſting the buds, which appear early in the ſpring.

XXIX. The *Liquidambar*, or maple leaved *Storax* is alſo found in abundance in both Floridas; from this the *Storax* is produced, by boiling the branches: this valuable gum may be worth attention, as a great deal might be gathered in theſe provinces.

XXX. *Cortex Eleuthera*, or *Cortex Winteranus*, is an article found in abundance in the ſouthern parts of the *Peninſula*; the people from Providence know it by the name of *Caſcarilla*, and carry a good deal of it to market; it is a medical plant of good uſe, and worth our notice.

XXXI. *Balauſtians*, or the double flowering *Pome granate* comes to a good perfection here, and as they are a profitable article they deſerve our attention.

XXXII. *China Root* is found in both provinces, but the prickly plant, commonly known by that name, does not yield the genuine kind; the true one, which is not thorny, is alſo found in abundance; and as in *India* this is paid for at the rate of from 6 to 16 ſhillings per hundred pounds, to ſend to Europe, it undoubtedly is an article worth exporting from America.

XXXIII. *Ipecacuanha* is found in almoſt every ſpot of oak land in this country, it may deſerve to be manufactured from the ſpontaneous root, if not to be cultivated.

XXXIV. *Jalap*, an article of conſequence in trade, not only on account of its uſe in phyſic, but likewiſe for its univerſal uſe in the fermentation of liquors: Europe has hitherto been obliged to import this article from *Mexico*, in which kingdom is a place called *Xaleppo*, or *Haleppo*, of which this drug bears the name; the only place where

where it was ſuppoſed to grow: we have hitherto been at a loſs to know the genus it belongs to, and many roots of purgative quality have been ſuppoſed to be it, and were ſubſtituted in its room: the late *Doctor Houſton* introduced it from *Mexico* into *Jamaica*; but while he was gone to *England* the man whom he left in care of it, ſuffered hogs to deſtroy it; however, this gentleman brought a pencil drawing of it to Europe, but as this did not ſhew the colour, and the ſeed has been ſown in the botanical garden, at Chelſea, without ſucceſs, what it was remained ſtill a ſecret, until i accidentally found it growing wild near *Penſacola*; being led to think, that a certain tuberous root made uſe of by the ſavages as a purgative might be it; i dried ſome ſlices of it, and found it ſo nearly agree with that drug in appearance, that it cauſed me to examine all the *convolvuli* i could find in this country, becauſe i was informed that to that genus the plant belonged: I ſucceeded, and ſamples, which i ſent to divers parts of Europe and America, have proved to be it, and of a good quality; this plant is pretty plentiful in ſome ſpots on the higheſt and drieſt lands, and i ſuppoſe its cultivation muſt be ſomewhat analogous to that of carrots.

XXXV. The above reſearches among the *convolvuli*, have made me acquainted with another of that *genus*, which ſeems to anſwer to the *Scammony* plant; i am not yet able with certainty to determine whether it really is the Scammony or not, but have great reaſon to believe it is.

XXXVI. Seeds of the true *Rhubarb* * having been

* In *Boſſu*'s travels by *Foſter*, vol. 1. page 353, London 1771,

been lately introduced into *America*, and the deep ſoil of the *Miſſiſſippi*, being very proper for its cultivation, i would by all means recommend trials to be made for raiſing that valuable root, which i think will not fail to anſwer our expectation.

XXXVII. A ſhrub reſembling in its fructification the *Starry Aniſe* is found in *Weſt-Florida*, but it totally wants the aromatic taſte of the ſeed; perhaps cultivation may bring it to the ſame ſtate of perfection with the oriental.

XXXVIII. *Silk Graſs* grows on the moſt barren ſand hills of *Florida* (called black Jack ridges) if it does not deſerve a cultivation on account of its fibres; yet the root having been found by experience to waſh woollen the cleaneſt and whiteſt of any thing yet known. *Quere*, would it not be uſeful for the woollen manufactory?

XXXIX. *Arnotto*, a uſeful dye is introduced in the colony; i have ſeen ſome of the plants vigorous

1771, mention is made both of *Jalap* and *Rhubarb*, as indigenous in *Weſt-Florida*; my ſtricteſt inquiry on the ſubject near the banks of *Miſſiſſippi* have been in vain to find *Rhubarb*, or even any thing the *French* call ſo, and as for *Jalap* i have all the reaſon in the world to believe, that this ſuperficial writer never was in thoſe parts of *Weſt-Florida* where it is found, as he wrote his book merely to blacken the officers of a different opinion from himſelf, in regard to their conduct in admitting *Engliſh* veſſels in time of need, into *New Orleans*, and being an inveterate enemy of M. *De Kerlerec* in particular, cloaked it under the ſpecious title he has done, and therefore i believe, that he received all he ſays, concerning natural hiſtory, from hear ſay only, and thus has been led to miſtake a kind of *Belle de Nuit* with a purgative root, which is pretty common on *Miſſiſſippi*, for the true *Jalap*.

Mr. *Foſter* in his note on this paſſage has copied the ſame miſtake, when he ſays it is the *Mirabilis*.

gorous and in good health, in Mr. *Wegg*'s garden; ſhould it ſucceed, its cultivation is by no means to be neglected, however, if it fails in *Weſt-Florida*, the ſouthern parts of *Eaſt-Florida* will certainly produce it.

XL. My knowledge of *Moſſes* being hitherto very confined, i ſhall not ſpeak with certainty about the *Argal (Lichen Rocella)* but having ſeen ſome *moſſes* on the rocky iſlands, and part of the *Peninſula* greatly reſembling the *Argal*, gathered on the iſland of *Orchilla*, i verily believe this valuable article to be there, if not it might eaſily be introduced from *Orchilla*; the face of this part of the country exactly reſembling that iſland, and its climate being nearly the ſame.

XLI. *Cochineal.* This valuable inſect is found in pretty large quantities in the *Floridas*, eſpecially in the eaſtern province, of the kind, which is called *Sylveſter*, on a ſpecies of *Cactus*, or *Opuntia*; could the true *Cochineal Cactus* be introduced into *Eaſt-Florida*, i make no doubt of its ſucceeding, and the vicinity of the *Cochineal* countries makes this not at all improbable; the people from the *Muſketo Shore*, or *Bay of Honduras* might be ſerviceable in obtaining it.

XLII. *Sumach* greatly neceſſary in dying and tanning, which is much uſed for preparing Turkey leather; ſeveral kinds grow in the ſouthern parts of *America*, and therefore it is worth our while to enquire into the matter, to know which kind is uſed for this purpoſe. This plant is alſo known in medicine. The large kind is uſed to make vinegar with, and i am told by the *French* people, that a piece of the wood put into a caſk of weak

or faded vinegar, or even water, will produce an intenſely ſharp vinegar.

As a hint to travellers, in the ſouthern parts of *America*, where the diſtance between the ſettlements often obliges us to carry our proviſions with us, i will aſſure them, that the fruit of this kind, ſteeped a very ſhort time in water, communicates to it a very agreeable acid flavor, which will render it very fit to make punch; which agreeable liquor proves a great refreſhment in a hot day, in the woods.

Another kind poſſeſſes a noxious quality; this grows in low grounds; beware therefore of making ſpits of this to roaſt meat on, and take it for a general rule not to employ any wood (unleſs you are well acquainted with it) growing in low grounds for that purpoſe, as almoſt all the noxious plants, of this country, are found in ſuch ſituations; in high grounds you may indiſcriminately uſe any wood (which has no bad taſte) for that purpoſe.

XLIII. If the acorns of the *Quercus Suber* could be introduced here, i make no doubt, in this part of the world (where above twenty kinds of oak are indigenous) the cork manufacture might be profitably carried on.

Since i am on the ſubject of oaks, i beg leave to mention, that in *New-England* there are works for making an extract of oak bark, which yields a conſiderable advantage by ſending it to *Europe* for the uſe of the tanners.

I have ſeen alſo a kind of dwarf oak producing galls; *quere*, could they not be made uſe of?

XLIV. *Madder*, *Rubia Tinctorum*. This root is one of the moſt uſeful ingredients in dying

wooll

wooll and ſtuffs red, as alſo cotton of an agreeable bloom color, and conſequently much uſed in *England* for the different manufactures; but incomparably the greateſt quantity uſed is imported from abroad, to the amount of large ſums.

It is likewiſe ſaid, that *Madder* is an excellent food for cattle, that it increaſes milk, and cauſes the butter to have a moſt agreeable color and flavor; i know it to be ſometimes cut for hay and we are told, that it makes an excellent fodder.

This plant does undoubtedly deſerve our attention in *Florida*, on the above accounts, eſpecially as the many trials to grow it to advantage in *England*, ſeem for the moſt part unſucceſsful. Many different kinds of madder have been tried for this purpoſe, but none have yet proved of real uſe except the *Rubia Tinctorum Sativa* of *C. Bauhine*, which is the ſort cultivated in *Zealand*, and ſome parts of *Auſtrian Flanders*.

If it be objected to the culture of Madder in *Florida*, that theſe are in a very different climate from the ſouthern part of *Britiſh America*, let it be remembered that in the *Levant* it is cultivated with ſucceſs, and that what comes from thence is a more valuable dye.

The ground in which Madder thrives beſt ſeems to be a deep black mould, in ſomething of a low ſituation, which ſhould not have a clay foundation, but ſand or gravel; the land in *Zeeland* is, and that on the river *Amite*, ſeems to be in general of this kind.

It is cultivated in *Zeeland* by offsets, or ſhoots, which they take from an old plantation, and replant immediately in rows, about eighteen inches apart; the young plants have each a diſtance of

four

four inches allowed them, and the ground is divided into beds of twelve feet wide, leaving a ditch of about twenty inches between them; this is done in the beginning of May, and great care is taken that no offset is planted, without it be furnished with fibres; as it is thought that for want of fibres they would miscarry, which they often do even in the most favourable seasons. The greatest labour, i think, i have seen the people at in *Holland*, in regard to this culture, is the covering the stalks, when they attain the height of about sixteen inches, leaving only the tops bare, in order to promote the multiplication of roots, which is the part of the plant manufactured and sold; when this covering is performed, there remains only the attention of weeding, which ought to be done often; the root is generally taken up the second year, but i think i have heard it said, as well as read it, that three summers are necessary for this crop to come to full maturity; the roots, which are said to yield the most and best dye, have been taken up, when they had obtained about three tenths of an inch diameter in size; it is thought that when they grow too large, they yield a dye more inclining to yellow than red.

The lateral fibrous vermicular roots, are said to yield a superior dye, but not to pay for the expence necessary for gathering them.

From this general sketch of the Madder culture, such as it is in *Holland* and *Zeeland*, my readers may see, that it is not so expensive an affair as it is generally deemed to be, but like all other things the cultivation of this plant may be carried on at too costly a rate, and it likewise may be attempted in too penurious a way: I have endeavoured

endeavoured to make my writing intelligible to every capacity, and therefore hope, that every one of my readers may be led into the true idea of this culture, to make it anſwer the purpoſe in *Florida*.

This cultivation by ſets or ſhoots being practiſed in countries where the ſeed does not at all, or very difficultly come to maturity, i think the ſeed ought to be introduced into *Florida*, or endeavours made to obtain it, from plants to be carried or tranſplanted there, which, if productive of ſeed, it ought to be ſown in drills, like rice; which i would think the moſt elegible in the moderate climates of thoſe provinces. I believe this plant to be a great impoveriſher of the ſoil, for in *Zeeland* they alway's allow ſome years between every two crops in the ſame ſpot.

As it has lately been ſaid, that there was no neceſſity for drying Madder, and that in uſing it green, there is even in the evaporation of dying matter a ſaving of one half, beſides the greater ſaving of the expences of a kiln, a mill, a drying houſe, &c. I muſt inform my reader, that he will find all this true, but then it will be neceſſary for him to tranſport the dying houſes from *Europe* to our Madder fields, and not the Madder to the dyers, in order to enjoy the profits of all this great and œconomical frugality; for perhaps there is not a plant on earth ſo ſoon inclining to fermentation and putrefaction, which is occaſioned by its ſucculency; yet for the planters preſent family-uſe it is certainly fit to uſe green; as ſoon as the roots have become ſpotted, or black, or loſt a ſtrong ſcent (ſimilar to that of liquorice) they are utterly unfit for any uſe; i ſhall therefore make a few remarks, neceſſary to be known for

the drying proceſs in *Florida*. A hot, ſun-ſhiny day may be uſed to advantage, to dry the roots partially; but if the weather be not favourable, when the roots are taken up, they muſt be ſpread within doors on a floor, taking care to ſpread them thinly, and ſtir them often; but this will never abſolutely preſerve them from changing, much leſs make them fit for tranſportation to any diſtance; if the crop be ſmall, a baker's oven may ſuffice, but beware of raiſing the heat above 180 degrees of *Farenheit*'s thermometer in the place where the roots are put, which ſhould be over the oven; but for larger crops kilns, ſimilar to malt-kilns are neceſſary; take care to make them roomy, keep an equal and moderate heat, and by all means prevent any the leaſt acceſs of ſmoke to the roots; for which reaſon I would adviſe large ovens, ſuch as the biſcuit bakers in *Holland* uſe, as preferrable to every other method; a building may be ſo contrived as to contain 13 ovens, viz. four on each ſide, three at one end, and two at the end where the door is, with one general brick floor over all; one or two windows may be ſo contrived as to give acceſs to a ſufficient light; let us ſuppoſe the oven ten feet long, by eight wide, and allow two feet for each partition, this will make an oblong apartment of forty-two feet by thirty-two in the clear below, and on the upper floor fifty-two, by forty-two, room enough for any crop; provide good brick funnels to your chimnies, and there can be no danger of fire, the reſt of the building may be of timber; in this proceſs Madder will looſe five ſixths of its weight.

When the roots are ſufficiently dried, they muſt be pounded in wooden mortars; for this purpoſe a mill

a mill conſtructed exactly like the old faſhioned rice mills is very proper, only varying in the ſhape of the lower end of the piſtil, or beetle; for in the rice mills their lower end is in form of an inverted cone; but here the lower end ought not only to terminate in a ſquare, but the but-end ought to be cut into ſmall ſquares, ſo as to render the peſtle toothed; for this reaſon alſo the mortar ought to be of a different form from the rice mortar, which laſt is likewſe an inverted cone, or ſhaped like the ſide of the top of a funnel, whereas this ought to be in form of a hollow globe, which has a neck like a decanter or bottle, in which neck the peſtle ought nearly to fit. To empty the mortars and ſupply them with freſh roots, is a neceſſary occupation during the pounding. The roots ought to be cleared of their outer bark.

It will then be fit for packing into caſks and exporting.

I remember to have heard it ſaid in *Holland*, that poor people, in order not to be obliged to ſell their ſmall crops to the manufacturer, at his own price, preſerve the roots from fermentation, by burying them between layers of earth in the ground, and that by this means it may be preſerved for any term of time, without perceptible alteration.

XLV. *Coffee* being an article to all appearance fit to be raiſed in the ſouthern parts of the peninſula, and ſome of the iſlands, i ſhall give it a place here. This is an object worth our notice, as its conſumption is great already, and ſtill increaſing; there is little or none produced in the *Engliſh Weſt-India* iſlands, in compariſon of that which the *Dutch* and *French* colonies produce.

Its culture throughout all the ſettlements where it is raiſed, is now by the young ſhoots obtained from the larger trees; but originally it was introduced by ſeed, which being ſoaked for about twenty-four hours, is then planted in tubs, pots, or beds, at about three inches diſtance, covered lightly with earth, and careſully watered when no rain happens. Uſually in about 14 days time the plant appears; when the young plants have attained the height of eight or ten inches, a rainy day is watched to tranſplant them into a walk, as it is there called, which anſwers to our orchards; the ground is here carefully cleared of all manner of roots and plants, and turned up at leaſt a ſpit deep. About twelve feet is the diſtance which ought to be left between every two plants.

The growth of coffee is quick, provided the ground be kept clean, but perhaps no plant is ſooner hurt than this by too luxuriant a growth of weeds or plants, round or near it. The ſecond year *Eddos* †, or *Taniers*, or even patatoes, may be planted among them, which will be a means of raiſing proviſions by the ſame labour, that is neceſſary to keep the ground clean.

This plant bears fruit ſufficient to defray the yearly expences at the end of the third year; its produce will then increaſe until the ſeventh year, and after this it will continue to bear in a degree nearly equal, until about the fortieth year of its age, when it begins to decay.

If any of the young plants ſhould fail, they ought immediately to be replaced by others.

In the *Dutch* colonies, when a coffee walk de-

cays,

† *Eddo* or *Tanier* is a ſpecies of eſculent *Arum*, well known in *Eaſt Florida*, and is good food for negroes.

cays, they root the trees out, and let the ground lay fallow for ten years, or upwards, during which time it affords paſture for cattle, and afterwards it is turned into a cocoa walk, or cotton plantation.

The ordinary height of this tree is from twelve to ſixteen feet; in the *Dutch* colonies they are lopped, to reduce them to a kind of *Eſpaliers*, for the eaſier gathering of the fruit.

When the coffee has attained to ripeneſs, it is carried to drying ſheds, which are conſtructed in the *Dutch* colonies on the following plan:

The *Area* of the ground generally applied to this uſe is ſeventy feet by thirty; a brick foundation of four, five or ſix feet high, is firſt laid to raiſe the building from the ground; on this the building is placed of timber, being of two ſtories; the upper floor is about twelve feet above the lower; in each ſide of the building are from twelve to ſixteen large windows likewiſe two at each end, on each ſide of large doors, all this is neceſſary to give a free acceſs to the air, to prevent the coffee from heating or ſhooting. In the lower part of the building a kind of drawers, of about ſix feet ſquare are ſo contrived as to be drawn without ſide the building, where they reſt on wooden rollers or blocks, theſe drawers receive the coffee after the drying floor, and in fine weather are drawn out, but puſhed back the moment it begins to rain; by this contrivance a large quantity is, as it were, inſtantly ſheltered from ruin; no other invention can be ſo expeditious.

The building muſt be furniſhed with two pieces of ſquare timber, of the length of twenty-five or thirty feet, and about eighteen, or twenty-four inches thick, made of hard wood; in theſe a row of

of mortars is ſunk, to beat the coffee in, peſtles or beatles for the ſame, fanning mills to clean the coffee, ſhovels for turning it often while it lies on the upper floor; a competent number of baſkets, of different ſizes, and a pair of ſcales with weights. Before this building there are generally one or two platforms, from forty to fifty feet ſquare, called drying floors, intended to take all benefit of the fine drying weather during the coffee harveſt. Adjoining to the building is generally a ſmaller one, containing a cooper's ſhop and a mill, called a breaking mill, through which the new gathered coffee paſſes, to deprive the grain of its pulp, or red outer ſkin; after coming from this mill it is ſoaked during one night in water, and next day ſpred upon the drying floors, where it remains till the air and wind have ſufficiently dried it; if rain ſhould happen it is quickly gathered into heaps, and covered with ſear cloth.

The coffee, being thus dried, is put into the drawers, where it is left till thoroughly dry; from hence it is carried into the loft (being now only ſurrounded with a thin, ſemi-tranſparent huſk over each pair of ſeeds) where it is left till the whole crop is gathered; the harveſt laſting often two months; while it remains in the loft it muſt be daily turned, to prevent its heating, and in good weather all the air poſſible muſt be admitted; after harveſt it is again returned into the drawers, and left there for three or four days, in order to become totally dry, it is then pounded or beat in the above mortars by hand, to deprive it of the thin, inner huſk, which involves every pair of ſeeds; after this it is fanned, and when fanned the broken grains are ſeparated from the whole,

which

which laſt are put in bales, or caſks, for the market, with all this ſeeming trouble a coffee walk is eaſier attended than a ſugar plantation, and is ſaid to be full as profitable.

XLVI. *Cacao* is a plant which i make no doubt would ſucceed in ſome of the lands found in the ſouthern diviſion of *Eaſt-Florida*, but as it is tender, and requires a deal of attention i ſhall only hint at it, as an object worth trying, and we ought to do this out of regard for our lives and conſtitutions; chocalate being become ſo common an aliment, and the vilainous adulterations of it in the northern colonies, make it an enemy to the ſtomach, whereas if good and genuine it proves a very agreeable, nouriſhing and balſamic food.

XLVII. *Tea*, a deſpicable weed, and of late attempted to be made a dirty conduit, to lead a ſtream of oppreſſions into theſe happy regions, one of the greateſt cauſes of the poverty, which ſeems for ſome years paſt to have preyed on the vitals of *Britain*, would not have deſerved my attention, had it not ſo univerſally become a neceſſary of life; and were not moſt people ſo infatuated as more and more to eſtabliſh this vile article of luxury in *America*; our gold and ſilver for this dirty return is ſent to *Europe*, from whence, being joined by more from the mother-country, it finds its way to the *Chineſe*, who, no doubt, find ſport in this inſtance of ſuperior wiſdom of the *Europeans*. Theſe conſiderations, joined to the additional evil of its being a monopoly of the worſt kind, and the frauds of mixing it with leaves of other plants, ought to rouſe us here, to introduce the plant (which is of late become pretty common

mon in *Europe)* into theſe provinces, where the ſame climate reigns as in *China*, and where (no doubt) the ſame ſoil is to be found; by this means we may trample under foot this yoke of oppreſſion, which has ſo long preſſed the mother country, and begins to gall us very ſore; and will the *Europeans* (according to an unaccountable cuſtom of deſpiſing all our weſtern produce, when compared to oriental ones) avoid drinking *American* tea? Be not ye ſo infatuated, ye ſons of *America*, as not to drink of your own growth! Learn to ſave your money at home! I cannot think this advice contrary to the intereſt of *Britain*, for whatever is beneficial to the colonies, will in the end be at leaſt equally ſo to the mother country.

In hopes of ſome well minded planter taking this into conſideration, i have thus hinted at it, and will write what i can, from hear-ſay, of its culture. Firſt then let me caution the attempter againſt impoſition; be ſure that you get the ſeeds in good order, and in their capſules, for the friend you employ may be deceived more in the plants than the ſeeds, there being a plant called by *Linnæus*, *Camellia*, and by *Kæmpfer*, *Tſubakki*, ſo exactly like to Tea in its leaves, as not to be diſtinguiſhed therefrom; this has frequently been ſold to the *Europeans* for Tea, and is thus introduced into *Europe*. If the ſeed cannot be procured in *Europe*, nor the real plant from a truſty friend, apply to ſome well-meaning Captain of an Eaſt Indiaman, no matter of what nation, he can get the ſeed in *China*, and it may be brought to *America*, without any danger of decay, in a manner which I ſhall hereafter mention for the preſerva-

tion

tion of ſeeds in general. After the tea ſeed is procured ſome may be ſown on the paſſage from *England* here. Will any reader ſay this is building caſtles in the air? let him remember, that ſeventy years ago rice was an utter ſtranger in *America*, till ſome ſuch good captain, who had been in the eaſt made a preſent of ſome ſeeds to a perſon in *Carolina*, who planted it; both theſe men are ſeemingly forgot, but how much more did they deſerve ſtatues, than many others, who have been in an unnatural manner, often for crimes, idolized, and as it were eternized, by pompous effigies, and lying monuments!

Even in their native country the ſeeds are very liable to miſcarriage, therefore they plant ten or twelve in each hole, in rows throughout the field; *Kæmpfer*, who had the beſt opportunity of information, tells us, that the plants are left to grow till ſeven or eight years before the leaves are gathered; but he ſhould have told us, whether this was neceſſary to the perfection of the leaves, or only done on account of the quantity obtainable, perhaps to ſtrip them younger would deſtroy the plants: I think he alſo ſays, that after ten years the plant is cut down, and young ſhoots ſpring up, or the plantation is entirely removed.

In the gathering, it is ſaid, much time is taken up, each perſon culling not above two or three pounds per day, it being done leaf by leaf; during the time a ſheet is ſpread over the buſh, in form of a canopy, to prevent the leaves drying haſtily, in the ſun-ſhine, which would exhale the flavour; it is ſaid alſo, that they have three crops, viz. in the end of *February*, this is the beſt; then in the end of *March*, and beginning of *April*, and the

laſt and worſt is in the end of *April* and beginning of *May*; what remains on the buſh till the end of *May* is ſaid to be unfit for curing, and conſequently for exporting; the obſervation on tobacco is alſo ſaid to hold good in regard to tea, i mean, that the upper, middle, and lower leaves are different in goodneſs, and conſequently three different kinds.

The curing is done on iron plates, over a moderate artificial fire, and the leaves are conſtantly rolled by the hand. *Neuman* thinks the dark colour, and the roſe flavour of Bohea tea, to be artificial; he ſeems to ſay that *Kæmpfer* and Dr. *Cunningham* (when they wrote that Bohea tea was the firſt gathering) meant it to be a crop of leaves collected before the plant comes to maturity, which is perhaps the caſe in the provinces of *China* that are too far north, to bring it to perfection: He alſo mentions the proceſs related by one *Meiſter*, to wit, that the leaves are put into a hot kettle, juſt emptied of boiling water, and that in this they are kept cloſe, till they are cold, afterwards committed to the hot plates this produces Bohea tea; he adds, that this at leaſt is certain, that by a ſimilar proceſs good Bohea tea may be made among ourſelves; a ſpecimen of which he himſelf exhibited to a numerous audience. He further ſays, ſome dealers in tea, in *England* are not ignorant that certain *European* leaves, particularly thoſe of the *Dog Roſe*, and *Cherry tree* may be ſo coloured as to paſs for good Bohea. The leaves of the red whortle, or cranberry, and roſe buſh ſeem now to be moſt in eſteem among theſe ſophiſticating gentlemen.

The above author relates, that the *Chineſe* are extremely curious in every branch of this manufacture, they gather the leaves with thin gloves, and the

the workmen employed in cutting it are reſtrained for a fortnight before from flatulent food, or whatever elſe may communicate an ill flavour.

There is a later writer on this ſubject, i think Dr. *I. C. Letſom*, who is perhaps better informed, but i have not been able to conſult him: be all this as it may, let us introduce the plant, and we will diſcover its culture and curation.

XLVIII. Such numbers of *Lauri* being found indigenous in *America*, it may not be amiſs to hint at the *Pimento*, or *Jamaica* pepper, as very proper to be introduced into the ſouthern parts of *Eaſt-Florida*, where, i make no doubt, it will prove a profitable article.

XLIX. *Mangroves* and *Salſola: Pot*, *Pearl* and *Barilla aſhes*, can nowhere be made to more profit than in *Eaſt-Florida*; the ſeveral *genera* of trees known by the name of *Mangroves*, are in ſo great an abundance, and ſo replete with ſalts, that they will undoubtedly yield a much greater proportion than any wood yet uſed for that purpoſe; i have made ſeveral very good ſamples on the coaſt; theſe trees have never yet been properly claſſed, i intend to do it in the courſe of this work: the *Kali* for *Barilla* is perhaps nowhere ſo abundant as in that province.

L. *Bees* are in great numbers in the eaſtern province, but found their way as far weſtward as *Penſacola* only about the year 1772, they not being original natives of *America*, but all of this claſs which are found wild, have ſprung from ſwarms deſerted from *Apiaries* in the ſettled provinces; there are none wild about the *Miſſiſſippi* yet, but a few years will certainly bring them thither; it is evident from this relapſe of the bees in a wild ſtate,

and their prodigious thriving, that honey and wax may be made very conſiderable articles.

LI. *Ginger* will certainly be found profitable if introduced into the ſouthern parts of *Eaſt-Florida*.

No doubt many of my readers begin to think, i have ſwelled this account beyond all bounds; i beg pardon for intruding on their patience, if i have done it, but the inquiring philoſopher will, i ſuppoſe, find that conſidering the variety of climates and ſoils, i might have gone on, and reaſonably enumerated a number of others; my earneſt hopes are that theſe looſe hints may prove beneficial to a continent, which has ſo great a ſhare in my warmeſt wiſhes.

I have every where avoided deſcribing expenſive ways of culture, ſuch are too much obtruded on gentlemen who begin the noble ſcience of agriculture; men are diſcouraged by following ſuch precepts; in thoſe hints which are new I ſpeak from a degree of experimental obſervation, in others i have choſen ſuch methods as are in uſe and leaſt expenſive, i have ſhunned a mere *theoretical* narrative, becauſe i utterly hate it: unpractiſed methods often appear plauſible, even when they will produce effects diametrically oppoſite to what were intended.

It is true, that the pine barrens (ſo called) will in all appearance not be ſoon wanted, eſpecially in *Weſt-Florida*; but i think that for thoſe, who are not poſſeſſed of hammock land, a hint for the improvement of theſe pine lands may not be amiſs; we ſee a ſurprizing vegetation effected on ſome of them: complaints of barrenneſs may ſometimes be removed by meerely adapting the ſoil to its proper uſe; a man who has a good piece of river

land

land, bordering immediately on theſe barrens, without any intermidiate oak or hammock ſoil in *Georgia*, *Carolina* and *Eaſt-Florida*, thinks himſelf almoſt always deprived of means to raiſe *Maize*, and will think his ſtaple land of leſs value on that account: let ſuch a perſon well examine his pine land, perhaps the clay or marl lays at the ſame depth below the ſurface, in that caſe, by mixing the ſoils, you may improve them ſo as to be fit for any purpoſe. None of theſe lands are ſo abſolutely barren but they will produce ſweet potatoes, or pumpkins; i have ſeen *yams* come to good perfection in *Georgia* and *Eaſt-Florida* in ſuch lands; in *Weſt-Florida* i ſaw them pretty forward in the navy garden of *Penſacola*, which is comparatively a meer beach. Peach orchards will do here as well as in the richeſt ſoils; the worſt kind of this land will produce rye to advantage, even twice in one year; the *ſeſamen*, or oily grain, a profitable article if well attended to, will grow kindly in them, and they produce crop graſs (a good paſture) in abundance, by merely turning them up often: for theſe reaſons then a man ought never to be too precipitate in pronouncing a piece of ground *abſolutely barren*; we have in theſe provinces no undrainable boggs, no mountains, and very few ſtones to deal with.

The manner in which cattle are now kept in the ſouthern colonies is unprofitable; twelve or ſixteen cattle might be with a little attention made to yield more profit in a dairy, than ſtocks of three or 400 do now, with all the labour and time at preſent beſtowed on them; the practice of letting calves ſuck ſo long as they now do, is contrary to the practice of all ages and countries, except among

among the Spaniards; who keep large ſtocks for the ſake of their hides and tallow only; and as in the ſouthern colonies the people ſeem more and more to neglect keeping a few cows at home for the dairy, and hides and tallow cannot be made large articles in trade, by means of ſmall ſtocks of five hundred or ſix hundred only, i can hardly ſee the intent of keeping ſuch ſtocks of cattle, except for exportation alive, as the ſtocks of horſes are kept; for in the article of beef, cattle can hardly yield profit where the *Carolinian* or *Georgian* method of killing at two, three, and four years old obtains, which is the cauſe of the badneſs of their beef.

Hogs are ſo profitable an article, and ſo eaſily made ſpontaneous, that it is a matter of the greateſt ſurpriſe to me that no more are raiſed in *Florida*; eſpecially as maſt is very various, and in great abundance.

The bounteous hand of nature has here given us an animal, which, by experience, we know may eaſily be domeſticated, whoſe fine wooll might yield good profit, and whoſe fleſh is equal at leaſt to our beef, and yields as much tallow; i mean the buffaloe: if inſtead of wantonly deſtroying this excellent beaſt, *(for the ſake of perhaps his tongue only)* we were to endeavour its domiciliation, either by a pure breed, or by raiſing a ſpurious one with him and our common cattle, i think we would find our account in it.

The *Mooſe*, or *American* Elk, found in the higher latitudes on the river, naturally leads a life ſo nearly approaching to a ſtate of domeſtication, that i am often ſurprized he has never yet been attempted to be incorporated among the claſs of uſeful tame animals on this continent. Theſe and

the

the like hints i think deſerve attention, and i hope they may be of uſe. In a country where horſes and cattle are in ſuch abundance, and conſequently cheap, and where human labour is ſo dear, more improvements in machinery ought to be introduced: it has amazed me often to ſee people ſo blindly mad as to ruin themſelves, by obſtinately perſiſting in building ſaw-mills in improper places, which has been here too often the caſe. The *Miſſiſſippi* indeed affords the means for mills at a ſmall expence, but they are only of temporary uſe. In ſuch a timber country as the *Floridas*, introduce the *Dutch* windmills, it is eaſily done; i have frequently heard, that they are unfit for this climate, but in my ſtricteſt inquiry not one reaſon appears againſt them, but that people by infatuation will run on a ſand, where ſo many before them have ſuffered ruin by making dams in improper places.

As much as poſſible diſuſe the hand hoe, particularly at turning up, and otherwiſe preparing the ground for ſeed; introduce the plough; the neweſt lands may be plouged, and the hand hoe is only neceſſary to aſſiſt a little round the edges of ſtumps, &c. introduce likewiſe the horſe hoe with the *Dutch* and *Suffolk* foot ploughs, to do the laborious work of the hoe in hilling corn up; in well improved grounds for rice uſe the drill plough, eſpecially in countries where an ox of four years old may be had for forty ſhillings, and a ſerviceable horſe for four pounds; all theſe would ſave great ſums, and render it leſs neceſſary for the planter to depend on the labour of negroes.

In lieu of the aukward tool made uſe of to cut grain,

grain, i mean the ſicle, i would adviſe the introduction of the ſhort ſcythe and hook, called in *New-York* government *ſegt* and *mat hook*; and in caſe of thin crops the ſcythe and cradle: by means of theſe, expedition and neatneſs will become common, whereas now the crop ſtands ſometimes on the field till it is damaged, unleſs a great number of ſlaves can be employed.

Threſhing is performed in the moſt aukward manner imaginable, in the Southern colonies; to many the common flail is entirely unknown, and long poles, or a crooked cudgel made uſe of, and where the flail is uſed it is ill managed; for the large crops of rice, &c, i would recommend a machine which i remember to have ſeen uſed in *Holland*, as long as my memory can ſerve, and yet ſtrange to tell, even in *England* the people were breaking their heads for the invention of a threſhing machine no longer than four years ago; when the ſame machine had been known, and commonly uſed in *New-York* and *Pennſylvania*, near fifty years: it conſiſts of a wooden cone, whoſe baſe is about two feet, or two and and a half foot diameter, and whole length is from nine to twelve feet; it ſhould be made of very hard wood, its ſurface is regularly fluted, toothed, ribbed or indented; the ribs are about fifteen in number, with as many grooves alternately between them, of about three inches thickneſs and depth; the ſmall end of this kind of roller is furniſhed with a ſtrong ragged eye-bolt and ring, and iron hoops to prevent its cracking, or the bolts drawing, this ring ſhould be about ſix inches diameter in the clear, and be fixed on a poſt in the middle of the floor, which for twelve or fourteen inches up ought to be caſed

with

with iron, to prevent the ring from cutting it off by the continual friction : the ſheaves being laid circularly round this poſt, the roller is by one or two horſes or oxen drawn round in a conſtant circular proceſs, one man attending to turn up the ſtraw continually ; this is more expeditious and cleanly than the trampling of it out with horſes and cattle, becauſe the thing is ſo contrived as to let the cattle walk without all, and it makes incomparably more diſpatch than the flail can even with many hands.

In the common way of ſhelling *maize* there is alſo great loſs of time. A man can hardly ſhell ſix buſhels per day, whereas with the flail he will ſhell twenty in an hour, and the fanning mill will ſoon clean it ; many more improvements will in time be wanting, but the above are now abſolutely neceſſary.

Thus far i have given a detail of the agriculture practiſed, or practicable in thoſe climates ; during the courſe of my collecting materials for this narrative, i have ſometimes been beyond all meaſure vexed, and at others i have been obliged to laugh at the ſilly notions, whereby *England* is deceived in her ideas of *America*, occaſioned by ſome fooliſh writers, who have raiſed ſome abſurd hypotheſis in their own brain, from whence they deduce as crooked *theories* as ever entered the thoughts of mankind ; thus writing without experience, they lead a parcel of blind copiers, as it were, in a ſtring, as if intended on purpoſe to deceive mankind ; and what is more ſtrange, ſome people ſo implicitly believe theſe ingenious writers, that i have ſeen them after coming here obſtinately follow the precepts of theſe guides,

though in direct oppoſition to what they ſee to be the practice of their neighbours, who have been taught by experience. How ſillily has one vented an opinion, that by clearing the woods of *North-America*, we would ruin our temperate colonies, and turn them into cold uninhabitable deſarts, thereby beſtowing the climates of *New-England*, on *Carolina*; † with more ſuch fancied evils, notwithſtanding that even when he wrote, *Canada* (by the *French* only deemed fit for a fur-factory) began by *Engliſh* induſtry to become a grain country; ſo that he might have known better, and now that ſame country even exports wheat; pray what is the reaſon of this but that the clearing the land cauſes the ſnow to remove ſooner than it formerly did? Under the head of ſugar in this work ſee more of this.

Juſt ſuch nonſenſe he vends, when he attributes the want of wood in the plains of the north weſtern parts of *America* to barrenneſs, when experience has taught every one that they are fertile; how well does it confirm this genius's opinion when we ſee without deception, that the nearer we approach thoſe plains to the weſt, the more temperate is the climate! At *Illinois*, in latitude 40, ſnow ſeldom lays three days, and cattle are out all winter; in the *Nadoueſſin*'s country, latitude 45 and 46, above two thouſand miles from the Atlantic, ſnow rarely exceeds three inches in depth, and the wild rice is found ſpontaneous in amazing tracts. Nor is his argument of the cold being more felt in a field than in a wood of any force; let him remember that ſnow lies

† Preſent State of *Great-Britain* and *America*. 8vo 1767.

lies a month, or even ſix weeks longer in a wood than in a field. This man dares to tell us "we "talk from experience." So it ſeems, when he ſays the badneſs of paſturage in the ſouthern colonies renders it impracticable to maintain ſtocks of cattle: was it my buſineſs i might enumerate more ſuch ſhining authors; † but as it could ſerve no good purpoſe i omit it, and only beg leave to hint that ſuch blind guides ought not to be too implicitly followed.

In the above account i have inſerted ſome articles which might poſſibly have come more properly under the head of manufacturing, ſuch as *indigo*, *pitch*, *tar*, *turpentine*, &c. and even *rice*, but their near connection with tillage has made me inſert them there, rather than in the following part of this work, where i have dedicated ſome pages to hints concerning manufactures.

Reducing the rough timber into boards is now the moſt common branch of buſineſs in the ſouthern colonies, that comes under the name of manufactures: a pair of negro ſawyers are taxed to cut an hundred feet per diem, this the induſtrious ones often perform by two o'clock, or ſooner, they are then ſuffered to cut lumber for their own uſe the reſt of the day, or do any other buſineſs, for which their maſters pay them; theſe hundred feet *per diem*, are ſix hundred per week, or thirty-one thouſand two hundred *per annum*, which, allowing them to be only inch boards, and to ſell at ſix ſhillings ſterling per hundred, is £. 93, 12 *s.*

† There is one ſo very cunning as to have diſcovered the labour of our ſlaves here to be dearer than that of hired people. Amazing wiſdom! See the Appendix to the Intereſt of *Great-Britain*. 8vo. 1760.

12 *s. per annum*, a noble benefit! which in thicker board, ſcantling, and ranging timber is much greater; the owner of ſuch a pair of ſlaves lets them out at £. 60 *per annum*; from hence we may gather how neceſſary the introduction of ſaw mills is to lower the price of this article.

Hogſhead ſtaves of white oak are made by what are called gangs of people; a ſtave making gang conſiſts of five perſons, a feller of the timber, who cuts down the trees, two to croſs-cut them in proper lengths, a river or ſplitter, who rives them with the fro, and the fifth is employed in ſhaving them; this gang makes five hundred ſtaves each day, which are ſuppoſed to be worth 30 *ſ.* is 6 *ſ. per diem* for each man.

Shingles of cypreſs and white cedar, which are made nearly in the manner of ſtaves, are ſold at about 10 *ſ.* per thouſand, and one gang may very well make three or four thouſand per day.

But the grand manufacture to be made of timber here, is SHIPPING, for this purpoſe no country affords more or better wood; live oak, cedar, cypreſs, yellow pine, are adapted by nature to this. O! how juſt is every *Engliſhman*'s reaſon for curſing the late peace-makers, when he reflects upon the fatal miſtake of leaving the iſle of *New-Orleans* in the hands of the *French* and conſequently of the *Spaniards*! and when he ſees them building ſuch fine frigates as they did laſt year on that iſland; to add to the misfortune they leave their own timber and cut it off of the *Engliſh* land, about the lakes, for preſent uſe; might not *England* herſelf infinitely rather build ſhips of war, and ſell them to her enemies, and ſo make profits of them, than to be obliged to behold this

with

with ſupineneſs? When we recollect the amazing diſtance into the heart of the country to which the *Miſſiſſippi* and its branches gives us acceſs, and where we may build ſhips of two hundred tons at leaſt; when we ſee the iron mines diſperſed up and down the country; when we recollect the poſſibility of producing the moſt immenſe quantities of hemp and flax; when we behold the more than rapid increaſe of mankind there; and finally when we ſurvey the harbours, *Charlotte*, *Tampe*, *St. Joſeph*, *Penſacola*, all proper for the admiſſion of ſhips of rank, beſides others we know not yet; what a field is open here! what a proſpect of power and grandeur ſeems to be already welcoming us! no country had ever ſuch inexhauſtible reſources; no empire had ever half ſo many advantages combining in its behalf: methinks i ſee already the *American* fleets inhabiting the ocean, like cities in vicinity!

The manufactory of iron will undoubtedly be very great here; every part of the weſtern province at leaſt abounds with it; no doubt other minerals are hidden in the bowels of the earth, but except lead and antimony they are not yet found.

The article of *Potaſhes* of various kinds have been mentioned under the head of *Mangroves* and *Salſola*; i ſhall only repeat here that no country can make theſe commodities equal to *Eaſt Florida*; that province can underſell and ſupply all others of the earth, when we conſider that *England* takes £. 50,000 ſterling worth out of *North America* alone, where people can not make it either ſo good or ſo cheap, it is ſpur enough to encourage ſome perſon to begin this manufactory in that country, but

but be aware of doing it in a manner clear of *Stevens*'s and other expenſive ſchemes.

Deerſkins though none are manufactured here, yet, being a great ſtaple commodity already, they deſerve a place here, was it but to remind my reader that the *Floridas* are watered by all the rivers by which peltry is like to come in future; and that by a little attention and pains taken with that trade, theſe two provinces, particularly the weſtern one, may lead it down their own channel to that degree, that every individual ſkin (got to the weſtward of the heads of the *Ouabache*, and ſo up to the weſtern branches of the *Miſſiſſippi*, and to the ſouthward of *Ohio)* muſt, as they certainly ere long will, center in the gulph of *Mexico*.

When we conſider the vaſt increaſe of ſtocks here, and the eaſe of maintaining a ſtock of a thouſand or fifteen hundred cattle, and four or five hundred horſes, and the very great difficulty attending the northern coloniſts in keeping up a ſtock even of no more than twenty or thirty head of black cattle, it muſt be evident, that tanning of leather will be a great buſineſs here; even allowing the number of *American* inhabitants to be no more than three millions (which number the late ſyſtematic writers ſeem determined to confine us to) and allowing two and an half millions of theſe to wear about ſix pair of ſhoes per annum, and that in *America* about ten millions of theſe are annually made of *American* leather, which is more than likely to be the caſe; the town of *Lynn* alone exporting above three hundred thouſand per annum, there will then remain about five millions to be ſupplied from *England*, even this leaves a large field open, and if we are induſtrious

induſtrious not only that gap will be ſtopped, but we may export tanned leather; if *England* does not want it, or will not take it, other countries will; conſider ye *Floridans* what an extenſive manufacture of *Chamois leather* your lazy neighbours of *Campeachy* carry on already.

When we conſider that the northern inhabitants clothe at leaſt ſeven eights of themſelves with cloth, that coſts them hardly any thing, but their induſtry, when we ponder well the indefatigable pains taken by the *Acadians*, ſettled on the *Miſſiſſippi*, to array themſelves in every reſpect with the produce of their own fields, and the work of their own hands, when we ſee the immenſe quantity and variety of raw materials afforded by this country, ſuch as wool, cotton, ſilk, &c. heretofore enumerated, muſt we not be inſpired by the genius of frugality, to make uſe of theſe bleſſings of the bounteous hand of nature, and to imitate theſe induſtrious people, whom Providence already ſuffered to be driven out of the land of their fore-fathers by the iron rod of arbitrary *Mars*, and cauſed to ſettle in our neighbourhood? If we learn by times to know, that we enjoy all theſe bleſſings, we ſhall have but little uſe for importing any thing but money.

Pork and beef will ſhortly be worth attending to on the *Miſſiſſippi*, as is evident from the quantities of ſalted wild beef, already exported by the *Spaniards* to the *Havannah*.

An article little known, perhaps not thought of, next claims our attention, i mean the extenſive fiſheries in the power of theſe colonies, with which they now ſupinely, not to ſay ſtupidly, allow the *Spaniards* to run away. The whole of the weſt

coaſt

coaſt of *Eaſt Florida*, is covered with fiſhermens huts and ſtakes; theſe are built by the *Spaniſh* fiſhermen from the *Havannah*, who come annually to make one or two fiſhing voyages on this coaſt, to the number of about thirty ſail, and one or two viſit *Rio d'Ais*, and other places on the eaſt coaſt of the penninſula, they arrive about the latter end of *Auguſt*, and continue coming and going till the end of *March*; their firſt care is to prepare their nets, and to build a hut, or refit the old one; then they new furniſh their ſtakes or ſtages with new ſtrings of ſilk graſs to the wooden hooks by which the fiſh is to be hung up to dry; their nets and other apparatus of lines, &c. are all made of ſilk graſs likewiſe; and as they fiſh upon ſhares, each man furniſhes his piece of net, number of lines, ſhare of ſalt, and *quota* of proviſions for the voyage, or if not able to purchaſe all theſe (which is ſeldom the caſe) the proportion of ſuch perſon is furniſhed by the owner or captain, who deducts their value from his ſhare, when he receives the dividend of the neat proceeds of the cargo; the diſtribution of this dividend is generally as follows: the veſſel draws one third, the *patroon* or maſter, two ſhares of the remaining two thirds, which is divided into as many ſhares as there are adventurers; reckoning two boys for a man: their charges are little more than the wear and tear of the veſſel, the purchaſe of ſalt from the King, and the duties of entry for the fiſh, which laſt i think is two and an half per cent, with theſe people a profitable trade might be eſtabliſhed; they have often told me, that in caſe they could find *Engliſhmen* on the coaſt, who would furniſh them with ſalt, they would not purchaſe any more than what

was

was abſolutely neceſſary to cover their licence, for theſe very men are obliged to go to *Key Sal*, to gather the ſalt there, and bring it to the *Havanna*, where they are obliged to deliver it into the King's ware houſes at three *rials* for a *fanego*, a meaſure containing ſcarce two buſhels, and when they prepare for the fiſhing voyages, they are not ſuffered to take any ſalt elſewhere but out of theſe warehouſes, where they are now conſtrained, by their moſt gracious Sovereign, to pay one dollar and an half, or twelve *rials* for the identical ſalt he took from them for three; proviſions and dry goods might alſo be ſold to them to advantage, but it would be neceſſary, that they were made certain firſt of finding ſuch veſſels on the coaſt, for without ſuch a certainty, they would not venture to come without ſalt, nor would they bring any money; the ſame veſſel that carried ſalt and dry goods might here drive an advantageous trade with the parties of lower *Creeks*, who come to hunt in the ſame ſeaſon, in this part of the peninſula, and always get great quantities of ſkin, ſhe might likewiſe get a load of fiſh, which would anſwer well in the *Weſt-Indies*, as the fiſh from hence always fetch a conſiderably greater price in the iſlands, than the fiſh from *Newfoundland*. The principal fiſh here, and of which the *Spaniards* make up the bulk of their cargoes, is the *red drum*, called in *Eaſt Florida* a *baſs*, and in *Weſt Florida carp*; the *French* call them *poiſſon rouge*; this is in thoſe provinces a fine fiſh, although in the northern colonies they are generally poor. They alſo ſalt a quantity of fiſh which they call *Pampanos*, for which they get a price three times as high as for other fiſh. A few *ſoles*, ſome *ſea trout*, and the

roes of *mullets* and *black drum* make up the remainder of the cargo; ſome oil from the liver of *nurſes* and *ſharks* is alſo carried; of the ſound of the *ſea trout* a glew is made by only drying them, which is a perfect and fine *ichthyocolla*. The roes of *mullets* and *black drums* are put into a pickle for about a quarter of an hour, then taken out and partially dried in the ſun, then preſſed between two boards; afterwards expoſed upon a hurdle in a ſmall hut to the ſmoak of the inner part of the ears of corn, which is properly the receptacle of the ſeed, and called the *cobs*. Theſe roes the *Spaniards* are very fond of, and uſe them inſtead of *cavear*. From this account my reader may judge of the worth of this fiſhery. Theſe fiſhermen make likewiſe no inconſiderable quantity of *ſhark oil*, and it is well known what number of *turtle* the *Providence* people catch on the eaſt coaſt.

The *Myrica*, or candle berry myrtle grows in great abundance on the ſea-ſhore of both theſe provinces; the wax produced by it is too well known to need deſcription; it is manufactured by throwing the berries into a hot bath, to diſcharge them of their wax, which is ſkimmed from of the top after the water grows cold.

Travelling through the uninhabited part of the woods, falling to the ſhare of every perſon, who arrives at preſent in *Florida*, it cannot be amiſs to ſay a few words about it: whether you go by water or by land it is moſt neceſſary to carry with you powder, ſhot, and a fowling piece; provide yourſelf with rice, or ſuch bread as you like beſt to uſe; a hunter is neceſſary and utenſils for dreſſing proviſions; always before night allow yourſelf at leaſt one hour's time to prepare fire wood, for this muſt be uſed in ſummer

as

as well as winter to rarify the air round the camp; always lay with your feet towards the fire, and you are out of danger of catching cold; if you are in a country where warring ſavages reſort, keep up a large fire all night, and be ſure to put ſome hats on poles near the fire, this will protect you from their attempts, unleſs they are at war with ourſelves. A bear ſkin on the ground to protect you from its dampneſs is very neceſſary; always chooſe an elevated ſpot, and if you have horſes chuſe a ſituation near a cane branch, or where the woods have been lately burnt, this will effectually prevent your beaſts from ſtraying. As the diet is generally roaſted meat remember my former caution againſt *ſpits* got out of a low ground; ſmall reeds are excellently adapted to this purpoſe: a ſmall hut covered with thatch of *palmittos*, or bark of trees, is always preferable to the lumber of a tent; ſuch an one, ſufficiently large for two men at leaſt, is eaſily ſet up in a quarter of an hour; if you are in a river be ſure of faſtening your boat in a ſtill water or eddy, and be cautious not to faſten it with a wythe, which is too common a practice with many; this precaution will prevent your boats going adrift by means of a beaver's appetite. If you are where the graſs is long, burn a ſpace of ground before you make your fire, this will ſave your baggage, which many have loſt by neglecting this; if in a part of the country where muſketoes are plenty, have a cloſe covering, called in this country a *Bère*, and made in form of a muſketo net, to put up over your bed, ſuſpending it by two ſtakes; and laſtly encamp not near any old trees, but as much as poſſible ſhelter your camp againſt the wind; by carefully obſerving theſe hints, you will not find tra-

travelling through the *American* deſarts ſo uncomfortable a buſineſs as it may generally appear to be; as for the dreadful ſtories told of wild beaſts, believe me they are vain, no animal is yet found in the *North American* wilderneſs ferocious enough to come within ſight of a man, if the wind wafts the air of a human body towards the brute; if it does not, he will not venture nearer than in ſight; but ſhould you wound a bear, or the *American* panther, ſo as to diſable him from flight, he will prove dangerous, but remember, if you tread even on a worm, he will turn up his tail at you, as it were in his own defence.

I ſhall now ſay ſomething about the moſt adviſeable method to be taken by emigrants, who intend to tranſplant themſelves into this part of *America*, from the more northern regions; firſt i would obſerve that if deſtined for *Eaſt Florida*, it is abſolutely neceſſary to carry at leaſt one year's proviſions in flour, maize, pork and beef; if to the eaſtern part of *Weſt Florida*, the ſame ſtep is to be taken; but if to the *Miſſiſſippi*, proviſions barely for the voyage will be ſufficient, they being always to be had there in plenty, at or nearly at the prices beforementioned; if the perſon be able i would adviſe him to purchaſe negroes in the northern provinces, and to carry a few more than he intends for his own uſe, the profits on the ſale of four or five will nearly defray his expences; carry no white ſervants, unleſs you have a mind to colonize a large tract of land, and this has never yet turned to account; i will ſuppoſe two inſtances of what in my opinion is the moſt elegible method of ſettling people of different ſituations in life.

Let

Let one man be poſſeſſed of two thouſand five hundred Dollars in money, and we will ſuppoſe him living in *Rhode-Iſland*, or in any other part of *New-England*, or *New-York*, *New-Jerſey*, or *Pennſylvania*; and allow him to have a wife and four children, with two houſe ſlaves, in either of theſe colonies; he may purchaſe eight good working ſlaves for twelve hundred dollars, out of his two thouſand five hundred; about four hundred dollars more will buy four young girls or boys, for which he will, in *Florida*, find ready ſale, with 80 per cent advance, but they ought not to be under twelve or thirteen years old; his next care is now to get a veſſel, we will ſuppoſe her of ſixty tons burthen, ſuch a one as may generally be had manned and victualed, at two dollars and a half a ton, per month, from any of theſe provinces, the planters proviſions and implements for himſelf and family will coſt about three hundred dollars, allowing him well provided with every neceſſary for eight weeks; thus we may ſuppoſe him arrived in the *Miſſiſſippi*, with ſix hundred dollars left him in money: here we will leave him a while, to pay a viſit to a poorer family, we will allow the head of this to have as many cattle, horſes, hogs and ſuperfluous implements as may raiſe him four hundred dollars, for a poorer man ſhould not attempt to go as a planter, he may as an artificer, or tradeſman, we will alſo allow him to have an equal ſhare of matrimonial bleſſings with his richer neighbour this man muſt lay out about ſixty dollars in proviſions, and about twenty-five for plantation tools, his paſſage money will amount to fifty dollars more, we may ſuppoſe him poſſeſſed of one good able negro, beſides his money which may be worth

an

an hundred and ſixty dollars; thus he may arrive at the *Miſſiſſipi* and have ninety dollars clear money after obtaining his land and ſtock; here by the way let all who intend going to this country endeavour to arrive about the latter end of *November*, in order to clear ſome land and build ſome place for ſhelter. White ſervants will never turn to account, there being ſo many idlers already imported on wrong plans, that you can carry none with you who would not in three months time think it very hard to be obliged to call you maſter, in a country where the moſt dirty vagabond you can hire at ſix Dollars per month, would think his honour touched by hearing any body call him to you with leſs civility than, *Sir, your employer would be glad to ſpeak to you.*

I will now throw this matter into a clearer light, by placing it in tables, in which the reader may ſee it at one view.

		Dol.
The firſt men being poſſeſſed of		2500
We will ſuppoſe him to prepare himſelf for the journey in New-York, where he purchaſes 8 working ſlaves, at £. 60 per head, - - - £.	480	
4 young do. for ſale, at £. 40	160	
Allowing his 14 ſlaves, including his 2 houſe-ſlaves 2 lb. of rice, and half a pound of pork per diem, for 60 days paſſage; this will amount to about three tierces, containing 1700 pound of rice, which at 24 s. per Ct. amounts to	20 8	
	660 8	2500

brought over,	£. 660	8	0	
2 barrels containing 420 lb. of pork, £. 4 10 per barrel,	9			
For his white family's uſe we will ſay,				
2 tierces of 360 lb. of bread, at 17 s. per Ct.	3	1	2	
1 barrel of 180 lb. of flour, at 22 s. per Ct.	1	19	6	
1 barrel of choice beef, £. 3	3			
½ barrel of choice pork, 50 s.	2	10		
50 lb. of hams, 1 s. per lb.	2	10		
a firkin, 60 lb. of butter, 1 s. per pound,	3			
2 large ſhoats, 10 s. a piece,	1			
2 ſheep, 15 s. do.	1	10		
1 dozen of geeſe and turkies	1	4		
4 dozen of ſmall poultry,	2	8		
coffee, tea, and ſpices,	3			
3 loaves, 30 lb. of ſugar,	1	10		
25 lb. of muſcovado ditto,		16		
15 buſhels of corn, to feed his ſtock, at 3s. per buſhel,	2	5		
ſmall expences, for greens, &c.		18	4	
Total in N. Y. cur. amounts to	700	0	0	1750
				remains, 750
we will ſuppoſe him to carry one half puncheon of Jamaica ſpirits, and one half ditto of common rum, Dollars				50
and to lay out for half a pipe of good Madeira, to ſerve him for his firſt year's ſtock, - - -				100
				150
There now remains as above Dollars				600

in his poſſeſſion, at his arrival: of this he muſt pay for the charter of the veſſel, 300

Remain Ds. 300

Suppoſe his 4 young negroes ſell at an average for 150 Dollars each (which is not a high price) this amounts to 600

Dollars 900

In the above account no mention is made of furniture, becauſe a man poſſeſſed of ſuch a ſum of money may naturally be ſuppoſed to be ſuperfluouſly provided with that article, and by ſelling a part of this, he may ſupply himſelf with others, that have a peculiar reference to theſe climates, and are indeed not to be diſpenſed with: axes, ſaws, ſpades, hoes and other implements of huſbandry perhaps neceſſary to the amount of ſixty Dollars, may be likewiſe ſuppoſed to be purchaſed out of the ſale of his ſuperfluous furniture.

Since the writing of this part of the manuſcript, the new mode of parcelling lands out in ſmall lots, and ſelling them at auction, was introduced into the colonies. This ſcheme, it is ſaid, was firſt projected by Sir *James Wright*, Baronet, Governor of *Georgia*.

On what terms lands are to be had now ſince the ſhutting up the land-office is yet impoſſible to tell; but the undermentioned was the ſtate of this buſineſs before that event happened, with the fees as they ſtood regulated in *South-Carolina*, *Georgia*, and *Eaſt-Florida*. In the weſtern office I was never converſant enough to know the real ſtate of this matter; but I have ſeen ſome of Mr. *Durnford*'s

ford's bills for ſurveys calculated at 50 per cent. higher; for what reaſon I know not, for ſurveying in *Weſt Florida* is attended with leſs difficulty, than in either of the others.

Petition, warrant, and precept,		11	7
To the ſurveyor general, and his deputy, each 2ſ3 per 100 acres; the number of acres for the above-named family would amount *honeſtly* to 850 acres, which makes at 4ſ6 per hundred	1	18	3
Suppoſe that 1000 acres were granted beſides on purchaſe, this would coſt 10ſ. per hundred, - - -		5	
The above-mentioned expences of petition, warrant and precept on the laſt 1000 acres is, - -		11	7
Survey of 1000 acres, at 4ſ6 per 100	2	5	
Suppoſe the land 150 miles diſtant from the ſurveyor's reſidence, he being allowed 6ſ9 for every 20 miles out and in, except for the firſt 20 miles, this being 130 miles, at 6ſ9 per 20 miles out, - -	2	3	10½
The ſame 130 miles at 6ſ9 per 20 miles home, - -	2	3	10½
Allow the ſurveyor 14 days to go and come back, he has four men with him to row in his boat, or carry his proviſions and inſtruments, if by land theſe ſame two men ſerve as chain-bearers, and two as blazers, they are generally paid for at 2ſ6 *per diem* each,		7	
Proviſions for 5 men for 14 days are			
Carried forward	£	21	14 2

brought over,	£21	14	2
to be had plentifully, and good, at one shilling *per diem*, rum included,	3	10	
Return of two precepts, plats and certificates by the deputy ſurveyor, 6ſ9 each, - -		13	6
Return of the two warrants, platts and certificates by the ſurveyor general, to the attorney-general, 6ſ9 each,		13	6
Two *fiats* by the attorney-general, 6ſ9 each, - - -		13	6
Governors and Secretray's fees, about	8		
Total Sterling £.	35	4	8

Which £. 35 4 8 Str. (in conſideration whereot the planter is now in poſſeſſion of 1850 acres of land,) are at the exchange of 4ſ6 per Dollar - Dol. 155

Building a comfortable neat timber houſe, out-houſes and negro hutts on this land, will coſt about - - - 250

Maintenance of the planter and his family for 4 months, during which time all the above buſineſs may be done and the houſe at leaſt rendered habitable, the expence of travelling to Penſacola and back to Miſſiſſippi included 150

Deduct theſe 555
from 900

and we will leave him now in poſſeſſion of his land, houſe, two negroes, and caſh to the amount of - - 345

Suppoſe the month of April now ſet in, and his negroes

negroes in theſe 4 months to have cleared him 20 acres of land, of which he plants 10 with *Maize*, peaſe, &c. 3 with rice, and 7 with indigo, from this he may reaſonably expect at the moſt moderate calculation on the Miſſiſſippi lands, about 400 buſhels of *Maize*, and 300 of peaſe, with perhaps about 500 pumkins, about 150 buſhels of rough rice * and 400 lb. of indigo by the beginning of November; we will ſuppoſe that in this ſame interval he has purchaſed

Six milch cows at 12 Dollars each	72
Six hogs - 4 - -	24
A ſtock of poultry - - -	10
A horſe - - - -	30
Having lived at home between April and November, we may reaſonably ſuppoſe theſe 7 months to have been leſs expence to him, and to have coſt for maintenance no more than the firſt mentioned 4 months or -	150
Expences of building his indigo vats	40
A boat for plantation uſe, - -	15
	341 Dol.

We muſt ſuppoſe him to have converted one of his houſe negroes into a field ſlave, which will make his working hands 9 in all; by no means too ſmall a number to clear and cultivate 20 acres for the firſt year

We

* It is neceſſary to obſerve here what i forgot before, this is that about three pecks of rice are ſown on an acre.

We have now indeed ſeen him expend nearly all his money, but the year is come round and he has now 400 buſhels of corn, 200 of which together with the pumpkins he muſt reſerve to feed his negroes and ſtock with during the next year: thus remains 200 buſhels of *maize* for ſale at 2 ryalls per buſhell as before ſaid is - - - 50 Dol.

Of 300 buſhels of peaſe (150 reſerved for his uſe) remain 150 for ſale at 2 ryalls alſo - - - 32½

150 buſhels of rough will make 3500lb. of clean'd rice, which his negroes manufacture during the firſt winter by hand; this is about 17 barrels of the Miſſiſſippi meaſure, of which 2 being kept for his own uſe, there will remain 15 barrels for ſale which at 2½ Dol. per barrel is - - - - 37½

400lb. of indigo at the price it bore in November and December 1772, is - 400

Thus we may ſuppoſe for this firſt year his live ſtock in a thriving condition, his ſtores full of proviſions, and his caſh amount to - 520 Dol.

He may at preſent reaſonably be thought to increaſe his working negroes to 10, and to add 10 more acres to his cleared ground, beſides improving laſt years clearing. I will now leave this man and give ſome advice to his poorer neighbour—I appeal to every man who will be candid and is really acquainted with the country i ſpeak of,

of, whether my calculations are juſt or not, and whether my ballance of the firſt years work is not exceedingly moderate: in regard to a buck or jockey, who expecting to find this new country on his arrival full of Vaux-halls, Ranelaghs, and New Markets; who juſt comes to ſcamper over it, and when he finds his expectations failing takes a look at the woods, and at the moderate life of the new planter, then turns up his noſe, takes a pet and goes off, puffing of a "d—n the the country," he can at beſt pretend that he was there in a dream; he is no judge, he has no buſineſs with ſerious books on the preſent ſubject, at leaſt i write not for him.

The poorer planter we have before allowed to poſſeſs - - - 400 D.

The proviſions neceſſary for his voyage for his negro and all included, to be bought at New York as before,

	£.		
2 tierces of bread	3	1	2
1 barrel of beef	2	5	0
1 barrel of pork,	4	10	0
25 lb. of ham,	1	5	0
1 firkin of butter,	3	0	0
4 ſmall ſhoats,	2	0	0
2 dozen ſmall poultry,	2	8	0
25 lb. muſcovado ſugar,	0	15	0
10 buſhels of maize,	1	10	0
coffee, tea, and other ſmall expences, rum included,	3	6	0
	24	0	2 equal to 60 D.

remains 340

his paſſage money, - - 50

remains 290 D.

brought over, 290 D.

I will ſuppoſe the plantation tools he wants may amount to 25

remains 265 D.

The expences attending a ſurvey of 400 acres of land (150 miles from the ſurveyors houſe,) the quantity this family was formerly intitled to, are as follows, viz.

	£.		
Petition warrant and precept as before - - -	11	7	Str.
Surveying 400 acres at 4ſ6		18	
Milage	2	3	10
Allow the ſurveyor 12 days with four men, but at the ſame time the planter may be ſuppoſed to have a ſon, being an able lad, who together with the negro make out three, thus remains only one to pay 2ſ6 *per diem*,	1	10	0
Proviſions for 5 men 12 days rum included, 1ſ *per diem*, -	3	0	0
Return of precept warrant, plat certificate and fiat - -	1	3	0
Governors and ſecretarys fees,	3	0	0
	£. 12	3	8 Str.

Equal to 52 Dollars.

Himſelf, his ſon, and negro eployed between November and April, in building a comfortable houſe of ſquare cypreſs timber, dove tailed, conſiſting of two rooms and a loft, together with a corn-houſe, and in clearing 8

Carried forward 52--265 D.

brought over 52--265 D.

acres of land, during which interval the maintenance of his family may be ſuppoſed to coſt - - 80 D.

Allow that he buys in the ſame interval a cow, - - 12 D.

2 ſows, 4 D. - 8 D.

a ſtock of poultry, - 6 D.

158 D.

A horſe 15 D.

A canoe we may ſuppoſe built by himſelf, iron work excepted, - - 2 D.

Thus we ſee him in poſſeſſion of 400 acres of land, a ſmall plantation ſtock, and 175 D. 90 D. (in caſh.

Suppoſe his clear land planted in the following proportion, viz.

5 acres with *maize*, peaſe and pumpkins,

1 acre of potatoes,

2 acres of indigo,

It may reaſonable be ſuppoſed to yield

200 buſhels of corn,

150 do. of peaſe,

300 pumpkins,

100 lb of indigo.

During ſummer, his ſon and negro attending the land, he may be uſefully employed in ſquaring timber, or in ſome handicraft he underſtands, this together with the increaſe of his little ſtock, and about 60 dollars well laid out, we may reaſonably think will

Carried forward 90 D.

maintain

brought over 90 D.
maintain his family from April till November - - - 60 D.

Thus the remainder of his cash now amounts to - - 30 D.
We must allow himself to have made his small indigo vats,
He has now for sale 100lb of indigo 100 D.
120 bushels of corn 2s. 30 D.
100 do pease, 2s. 25 D.

155 D.

Thus he may very justly at a moderate computation be said to remain at the first years end in possession of 400 acres of land, a comfortable house, improving stock, and fruitful farm, besides in cash, 185 D.

Let it always be remembered, that the same calculation I have made for the Mississippi, will nearly answer for the *Tombechbe* or Mobile river too; but if you intend for the eastern province, or for *Pensacola*, be cautious and bring provisions along with you to last you at least the first year. It may not be amiss to recapitulate in a general view the present exports of these provinces, together with the possible additions, which to all appearance may be made to them as mentioned in the foregoing pages.

1st. Articles already exported from these provinces.

Indigo,
Maize,
Rice,
Tobacco,
Indigo seed,
Salted wild beef,
Carravances,
Live cattle from West Florida, Mules

Mules from Spaniſh Louiſiana,
Pitch,
Tar,
Squared timber,
Cedar poſts and plank,
Cypreſs & pine boards,
Plank of various woods,
Scantling,
Staves and heading,
Shingles,
Saſſafras,
Hoops,
* Dried ſalt fiſh,
Canes,
Oranges,
Deer-ſkins,
Peltry,
Myrtle-wax,
Pacan-nuts,
Raw hides,
Buffaloe tallow,
Bears oil.

2d. Articles, ſome of which are already naturally found, and others, which to all appearance will ſoon be introduced, and muſt become ſtaple commodities in theſe provinces,

Wheat and wheat flour,
Rye,
Hemp,
Flax,
Bees-wax and honey,
Silk,
Wine,
Madder,
Rhubarb,
Jalap,
Pot-aſh,
Barilla,
Safflower,
Oil of Benni,
——of ground nuts,
Oil of olives,
Cotton,
Tanned leather,
Salt beef,
Salt pork,
Ichthyocolla,
Cavear,
Turpentine,
Oil of do.
Roſin,
Gum elemi,
Storax,
Figgs,
Raiſins,
Drugs of many kinds.

3d. Articles which we have the greateſt rea-

* This article and Cavear with ſome Ichthyocolla are already exported by the Spaniſh fiſhermen, the two firſt in very conſiderable quantities.

ſon to believe will in proceſs of time become ſtaple exports from theſe provinces; theſe are,

Sugar,	Coffee,
Rum,	Pimento,
Ginger,	Cacao.

4th. Articles of which it were to be wiſhed that the introduction would be attempted ſoon, under ſome encouragement,

Tea,	Cork Tree,
Arnotto,	Spurious breed of the
Orchil,	buffaloe.
Cochineal,	

I have uſed my utmoſt endeavours to collect materials for aſcertaining the enumerated exports of Carolina and Georgia for the laſt two years, but to no purpoſe, except a paper of the beſt authority wherein the ſtate of the exports of the laſt province are recapitulated, and their value aſcertained; this paper was printed by James Johnſton, in Savannah, and is republiſhed in this work, with a view to convince my reader by the moſt undoubted matter of fact, that the province of Georgia has advanced the value of her exports in about ſeventeen years time from £ 15000 to £ 121000 ſterling per annum, before the 1ſt of January 1773, as ſhewn in page 104 of this volume, this together with a conſideration that in the year 1768, when Georgia was ſtill poor, that province and Carolina were thought to increaſe the wealth of the Britiſh nation, near a million ſterling* will make us reaſonably judge that theſe two provinces under conſideration, (one of which is at leaſt equal to Georgia, and the weſtern one infinitely

* Political eſſays 4to London 1772. p. 359.

infinitely ſuperior to both Carolina and Georgia in point of the quantity of fertile acres) may in 10 years time do as much, provided that the courſe of nature be not forced into another channel, when either by fraud or violence means will be found to deprive the inhabitants of the Floridas of the benefits which have accrued to Carolina and Georgia, from that law of nature and of God, the *lex agraria*. Commerce is ſo effectually neceſſary to all people on earth, that none can be ſaid to ſubſiſt without it; it is in this part of the world chiefly neceſſary on one account; this is to acquire the means of power to defend the country by riches, which in all probability we muſt expect to do chiefly ourſelves, if we may judge from the policy of deſtroying the forts *Toulouſe* and *Tombechbé* among the chain of forts that defended the colonies from the inroads of the ſavages; it may alſo be of uſe to maintain the poor, for of theſe there are already no inconſiderable number who not being brought up or uſed to tillage are obliged to become fiſhermen and hunters, contributing to ſupport the naval power of Britain may likewiſe be called a third important motive to urge us on to a promotion of trade, but this laſt cauſe of incitement is yet in embryo. Let us endeavour to build veſſels ourſelves, let not our trade in this country (where ſhips may be ſo eaſily procured) be confined to ſelling our products at home to people from abroad, who will come to fetch them at pleaſure; if we do, what muſt become of the hopes of ever extending our preſent limited ſettlements! conſider that on this point depends the increaſe of mankind, and the welfare of every country.

Never

Never let us ſuffer monopolies from abroad; obſerve with what a fatality they are attended; ſee what a large cultivable tract of America lies waſte through the influence of a mean dirty company, who do not annually trade to above one fourth the value of what ſome private merchants do both in England and Holland, and who have ever with might and main in private oppoſed the purſuit of a buſineſs * the very effecting and encouraging of which was the fundamental intention and condition of the charter which intitles them to be at preſent ſuch a ſet of illegal regraters.

When we conſider again the effects of the eſtabliſhment of European factors on the trade of Virginia, we ſhall likewiſe ſee the effects of monopolies to be pernicious; for this very ſcheme, however ſtrange my aſſertion may appear, is a monopoly in diſguiſe; keep ſuch *mangonizers* from among us; it is true, ſome few merchants will be at firſt poſſeſſed of the chief of all the trade, and thereby (if they are not more virtuous than the generality of mankind at preſent are) have it in their power to do much miſchief to commerce, but let it be remembered, that as long as they are not factors from Europe there is room for others to come in, whereas if once European factors take place, who have the ſale of the European manufactures conſigned to them, with orders to keep the price of our valuable products within their own ſtated limits, it is alſo done with us; commerce will be ſo cramped that the innumerable quantities of profitable

* Diſcovery of a north weſt paſſage.

fitable and fertile acres of this wide extended waſte of new world might as well be converted into a ſea, and think not theſe cautions premature; there is no want of deſigning men to ſet ſuch a ſcheme on foot to the prejudice of theſe new countries, and too many ungrateful ſons of America itſelf, would be found to turn their acquaintance with its commercial intereſts to advantage in gratifying a deſire to have a bite at her vitals. I would not be thought, notwithſtanding this, to contradict the advice i gave in page 74 of this volume; that ſcandalous licentiouſneſs which ſo greatly prevails among the preſent traders, is ſo great an evil, that it is become highly neceſſary a leſs one ſhould be introduced to effect the deſtruction of the greater, by monopolies of the trade of each particular ſavage nation being granted to different men, who would go to reſide in each of theſe different nations; nor ſhould they have this ſtretch of favour beſtowed on them by the community, unleſs they are laid nnder proper legal reſtraints, and until ſuch time, as an amendment in the preſent diſtracted ſtate of this great and profitable branch of trade might be effected.

It would ſcarcely have been neceſſary to ſay ſo much on this ſubject, were it not that new countries are ſo open to an introduction of novel ſchemes, which will be found of pernicious conſequences when it is too late; i ſay it therefore once more, oppoſe all ſchemes that may have a tendency to introduce a monopoly of your products, for a concluſion, hear from me the opinion of the greateſt ſtateſman Europe ever produced;* he ſays,

* Jan De Witt, counſellor penſionary of Holland.

ſays that it was the opinion of the greateſt ſtateſmen (undoubtedly after him) that had the rulers of that reſpectable union in 1609 dealt in the ſame manner with every branch of trade as they did with that of the Eaſt and Weſt-Indies, *not one tenth part of the inhabitants of that opulent country would have been able to live and earn their bread*; and Holland would have been ruined. Another writer poetically exclaims, "this (meaning monopolies) is the ſpring from whence miſery overwhelms the people."* In ſhort, to me it ſeems nothing can be more evident than that the eſtabliſhing a rational commerce, in an equitable manner, ſhould be a principal aim at the ſame time with the eſtabliſhment of agriculture, and introduction of profitable ſtaples in a conntry ſo peculiarly full of advantages for the promoting of theſe grand objects, as the weſtern province eſpecially is.‡ The particular branches of commerce ſo naturally point themſelves out, that it is

* *Hac fonte derivata cladis in patriam populumque fluxit* Thoughts of the preſent ſtate of trade in India.

‡ I am here tempted, although not the leaſt appearance of ſuch a monopoly exiſts yet, to lay before my readers the manner of government at Surinam, a colony of people who are beyond contradiction poſſeſſed of *real liberty* in all its extent, and whoſe political hiſtory (notwithſtanding their vicinity to Great-Britain) remains abſolutely a dark labyrinth to almoſt every individual of all ranks and claſſes, high or low, in the Britiſh dominions, notwithſtanding the knowledge of a pamphlet, called *Obſervations upon the Netherlands*, whoſe author § (I aſk pardon of his reſpectable memory) has only made ſome crude and ſhort remarks, in which he has in the moſt evident manner, publiſhed his thorough ignorance of the ſtate of the government he pretended to explain. This mode of adminiſtration would

§ Sir William Temple.

is unneceſſary to ſay mueh on that head; I will however ſlightly touch on a very few of the principal

never have been erected by my countrymen over their plantations, was it not that a *monopoly* was at the head of it, what I offer here is a faithful tranſlation of ſome papers authenticated in the utmoſt extent of the word.

" The *governor*, who at the ſame time is *colonel* of the military, (not the militia only) has the ſupreme command over the colony, as well in civil as military affairs: he is appointed by the ſociety; but his appointment muſt be approved of by the *univerſal ſtates*. In affairs of conſequence, he is obliged to aſſemble the council of police, where he always preſides, as well as in the *council of juſtice*, the vacating offices are *pro tempore* in the gift of the *governor* till further orders from the *directors*; the *governor* has the care of the ſafety of the colony, and iſſues the neceſſary orders for that end; but when is to be protected againſt inimical invaſions, he muſt aſſemble the grand *court-martial*, conſiſting of the *commander*, all the *captains*, and as many members of the *council* of *police*, as there are *military officers* in the *court-martial*; the *governor* preſides in this aſſembly, and propoſes what *he thinks* neceſſary for the ſecurity of the colony. Laſtly, the *governor* (by his inſtructions) is obliged to protect and promote the reformed religion in *Surinam*. The governor has a *ſecretary*, who is paid by the *directors*. The maintenance of all the *officers* is paid out of taxes impoſed on all the *inhabitants*, the *directors* pay only the *governor's ſalary* with a *part* of the pay of the *ſoldiers*, and the maintenance of the *garriſon*.

The *council* of *police* and *criminal juſtice* conſiſts of ten *counſellors*, (including the commander of the *forts and troops*, who bears the title of *prime counſellor*,) with the *attorney-general* and a *ſecretary*: it has already been obſerved that the governor conſtantly preſides in this *council*.

The *council of juſtice* conſiſts of the *governor*, and ſix other perſons, to whom a ſecretary is added; civil affairs are managed by this *council*. But an appeal lies to the *univerſal ſtates*; the *governor* has here only one *vote*, except where a caſting vote is wanted, *in theſe caſes his opinion is deciſive*; the counſellors of *police* and *juſtice* draw no *ſalaries*; the members are elected by the votes of all and every of the inhabitants for *a double number*, out of which the *governor*

cipal proſpects now apparently already open to us. Our timber trade is certainly capable of being made

---

appoints according to his *pleaſure*: they muſt declare by a *ſolemn oath* that they will obſerve and maintain (in every part) the *charter* granted by the *univerſal ſtates* to the ſociety and that in every other buſineſs they will *conform* themſelves to the *orders* which from time to time they may receive from the *directors*.

At Paramaribo there is alſo a chamber of ſmall affairs, and *a chamber for the management of the affairs of orphans and unpoſſeſſed legacies*. The firſt conſiſts of ſeven *commiſſaries* and one *ſecretary*; the laſt of four *overſeers of orphans*, who have a *clerk* and *book-keeper* in their ſervice.

The *military*, maintained at *Surinam*, conſiſts of four companies of foot; the governor is their *colonel*, and *captain* of the firſt company; the *commandant of the forts* commands the ſecond company; this laſt named gentleman together with the *captains*, *lieutenants*, and *enſigns* compoſe the inferior *court-martial*. *The ſeven provinces have promiſed to pay the expence of one man in each company*, on the return of the *war-office*, for the protection of the colony of Surinam. The whole colony is divided into eight parts; according to which diviſion, we find a ſimilar number of companies of *militia*; each commanded by a captain, the two firſt companies are compoſed of the inhabitants of *Paramaribo*, the third of the ward of *Thorarica*; the fourth and fifth from upper and lower *Commawina*; the ſixth of *Cottika* and *Perika*, the ſeventh from *Paulus-Creek*; and the eighth of the *Jewiſh nation*.

The churches, the clergy, and lecturers are maintained at the expence of the inhabitants; the clergy meet yearly in the month of February to conſider the ſtate and neceſſities of the church. In this aſſembly (known by the name of *Conventus Deputatorum*) a counſellor of the *court of police* preſides, with the title of political commiſſary.

As an addendum, every man without exception, whether a native of the mother country or not, is obliged on his arrival to take the *oath of fealty* to this *noble ſociety*.

I do not preſent my readers with the above account becauſe I think a general monopoly is ever likely to take place, but to let them have an opportunity of comparing their own happy circumſtances with thoſe of a people where monopo-

made incomparably greater than that of other countries together, as well in quantity as in variety: but care ſhould be taken that this trade ſhould be put under ſuch regulations as would prevent a waſte of timber, (ſuch as has been too fatally practiſed in the north of America,)* and at the ſame time make our timber by a proper mode of manufacturing, anſwer the European markets, equally with thoſe of the Weſt-India iſlands, where the ſuperior quality of Weſt-Florida timber ſtands acknowledged without a rival. Nothing is wanting to effect this, but the erecting a number of ſawing-mills on the Dutch model, and the procuring a regularity of demand for the manufactured boards, &c. As a proof that large quantities of timber may be brought down to our ſea-ſide ſettlements, I beg leave to relate the following inſtance; *Monſ. de la Gauterais*, formerly an officer in the ſervice of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, but now reſiding as a planter on Pearl-river, ſome years ago had the command of the garriſon of *Tombechbé*, during this tedious ſequeſtration from chriſtian inhabitants he thought

---

liſts preſide, conſidering at the ſame time that even theſe monopolizers through poverty are obliged to allow extraordinary privileges; I wiſh to put every perſon on his guard even againſt particular monopolies or monopolies in diſguiſe.

All Dutch ſhips pay three guilders per laſt, both at entertering and clearing out of the colony, which is about 2*ſ.* 9*d.* ſter. per ton, of every ſhip, port-charges, and the inhabitants pay a general poll-tax, black or white; each 50lb. of ſugar, and 2 ½ per cent, on all imported goods, and no veſſels from the other Dutch colonies are allowed to enter here.

* For a ſmall inſtance, dog-wood is uſed as fire-wood in New-York; it is a hard fine grained timber, fit for many uſes to much better purpoſes.

of a ſcheme to turn this ſolitude to advantage; to effect this he employed ſeveral ſavages of the Chactaw nation in the cutting of cedar trees, and made thoſe of his little garriſon who were able and willing for a reward to do it, ſquare the timber, and form ſome of it into a very ſtrong frame of a houſe of about ſixty foot by twenty-five, which frame was next ſpring erected on an iſland or gravel bank, about two miles below the fort, and during the ſummer ſeaſon, and receſs of the waters, this frame was filled with the ſquared timber, which was effectually ſecured againſt removing. When he had this raft compleated, he got leave of abſence, and watched the time of the riſing waters, which at length took the raft away and him with four people upon it; this raft drew about 12 feet of water, and came down the river without let or hindrance, carrying before it every obſtacle (even bending large trees under it) all the way down to Mobile, and by ſome neglect even as far down the bay as the preſent fort Croftown; when thus we ſee that an enormous raft containing upwards of five hundred tuns of ſolid timber may be with facility brought down the *Tombechbe*, above three hundred miles, what have we not a right to expect in the *Miſſiſſipi*.

Naval ſtores are likewiſe an article of immenſe ſpeculation in both provinces; Weſt-Florida already ſupplies Spain with conſiderable quantities; no province can ſo profitably furniſh Madeira with corn and pipe-ſtaves than Weſt-Florida, and in return ſupply itſelf and other provinces with wines: the above named fiſheries likewiſe may yield a very profitable commercial

benefit.

benefit. The trade for furs is a fifth article of importance, and is already very great; to mention *rice*, *indigo*, *tobacco*, &c. would be ſuperfluous. But i have one material point to mention, i have often wondered at the ſtupidity of people let looſe in a certain part of the field of commerce: i mean the trade with the Spaniards, the deceitful appearance of which has led many into ruin, and yet intoxicates every one who is ſo unfortunate as to ſtray within its bounds to a degree of madneſs. The generality of traders this way, conſider only the price of things as they formerly ſtood, and not that theſe articles are much fallen in their price on the Spaniſh coaſts; the danger attending this trade they deſpiſe, though it too often proves fatal; the delays on the coaſt are not ſo much as thought of, and the perfidy of the Spaniſh traders forgot; the underſelling by Dutch and French traders, although very real, is thought chimerical, and ſo on; in ſhort, the proſpect is here ſo gilded over, that nothing but profits appear, where nothing but certain and inevitable loſs can be expected; the fatal miſtake of over-ſtocking every part of America with European manufactures, is a kind of obligation, or rather compulſion on us to ſtrike out into ſuch pernicious branches of trade to the ruin of thoſe who are intereſted, as well here as in Europe. Be then adviſed, and let no vain hopes intoxicate you, have patience, and if you import goods from Europe with views of profit, import them in moderate quantities, unleſs long credit or abundance of money enable you to wait patiently for the arrival of the Spaniards on our own coaſt; and let none of our veſſels frequent

their

their coaſts except it be for the purpoſe of cutting fine timber and dye-wood, (and even theſe not often) or when you are very well ſecured by value left in your hands for the veſſel to fetch a previouſly engaged, (but by no means by you) yet paid for cargo. Believe me, an American Spaniard will give you more for your goods at your own houſe than he will on his coaſt, and by coming to us he ſeems to looſe all his cunning, which in fact is only owing to our eagerneſs of compleating a voyage when we arrive on their coaſts. More branches of trade are not at preſent to be mentioned, becauſe none have as yet appeared in this country to be worth purſuing, but an immenſe variety muſt and will in the courſe of nature make their apperance.

Having now explained my meaning in reſpect of the commercial intereſt of the country, i will ſay a few words on the benefits ariſing from the population of theſe and other ſimilar provinces. It is an undoubted fact, which has been long ago taken notice of,* that one man tranſplanted into the colonies creates work for four or five in the mother country; a late writer § agrees with this in ſaying, that numbers of people who would have migrated to foreign countries, or done worſe, are, by coming here preſerved, and when become rich, return home. I muſt, however, differ in opinion from a third,† who has quoted both theſe, and expreſſes his opinion, by ſaying, that emigrants ought to be made ſettle where they

* By Sir Joſiah Child, in his diſcourſe on trade, p. 149.

§ Dr. Campbell's conſiderations on the ſugar trade.

† Political eſſays, p. 359.

they may be beneficial to Great-Britain; his ſaying would be juſt if a migration to the northern colonies was pernicious, but this is ſo far from being the caſe, that people there love room as much as any where; the continual and of late exceſſive importation of ſettlers into theſe colonies is an evident proof of this, for by means of theſe, even the natives are obliged to look out for habitations where they are more at liberty to encreaſe, not only the neceſſaries of life to which they are at preſent confined, but alſo profitable ſtaples for the mother country. A very ſtriking proof of this appears at preſent in every one of the northern colonies, though in none ſo much as in Connecticut, whoſe very hill-tops are inhabited full; thoſe migrations ought therefore to be encouraged, becauſe they will naturally find their way to the more favourable climates and ſoil of the ſouthern colonies. It is alſo the intereſt of the ſouthern colonies to encourage the migrations from the northward, for fear theſe laſt might by being confined within their prolific regions be in time induced to think of forming bodies of modern Goths and Vandals to over-run and invade the territories of their more happily ſituated ſouthern neighbours. I am therefore induced to think, that (however ſtrange it may appear that a people in one hundred and fifty years time ſhould increaſe ſo rapidly as theſe have done) there is a neceſſity even now to enlarge their territories; in this i agree with the laſt quoted writer, and if Britain wants to ſecure the dependency of theſe colonies, it is abſolutely incumbent on her to allow this, contrary to ſome late ill-judged ſchemes as this may appear.

appear. Can ſhe ſuppoſe that thoſe countries will remain unſettled? No, the proſpect is too fine, numbers of families have through the natural courſe of the increaſe of mankind ſettled themſelves on the lands intended lately for a new province on the Ohio: if i am rightly informed, no leſs than fifteen hundred families already, and many others on places not yet ſo much as thought of in Britain. Theſe are the people who are moſt likely to form independencies, and not the known provinces; what ideas have theſe people of the paltry fear of a war with a few ſavages, (for in the northern America they are but few) not that i would be thought to imagine that theſe laſt mentioned provinces would not ſtrike in with them in caſe of favourable opportunities; what if ſome enterprizing genius among thoſe diſperſed inhabitants ſhould form an idea of becoming a great man, and by inſinuating himſelf among the moſt weſtern tribes of ſavages (who never having had intercourſe with us, nor any other white people, ſuch for inſtance are the *Nadoueſſins*, who are ſaid to be a people remarkably tractable) would incorporate a body of whites with them, and form combinations with other neighbouring nations, and thus form themſelves into a regular ſtate. Such a ſtate would undoubtedly ſoon become formidable, and be daily increaſed by ſuch men as for want of room would leave the crouded provinces. Theſe, ſuppoſing them at firſt vagabonds, or little better, when they ſhould find themſelves in a place where they might poſſeſs the ſweets of life at eaſe, would find it their intereſt to become united with the common weal; therefore, i ſay again, that ſince

for

for want of room, people to the number of at leaſt five hundred thouſand men, brought up to farming, are now without employ through lack of land, and therefore they are obliged to migrate,) and ſettle without the limits of the eſtabliſhed governments, and thus it is highly incumbent on Britain to enlarge thoſe limits, or form new provinces; a few paltry tribes of ſavages who retain the ancient grudge againſt us are no obſtacle; the emigrants will ſoon bear down thoſe melting remains of a people, who having loſt their country, cannot fail to hate us, on that account, and in a kind of deſpair will rather chooſe to be deſtroyed than to incorporate with us. Such bodies as above deſcribed being once formed, can any man in his ſenſes ſuppoſe, that poſſeſſed with the ſpirit and ideas of freedom, for which the Americans are ſo remarkable, they would after a courſe of thirty or forty years enjoyment of ſuch an independency be brought to ſubmit themſelves to any impoſed government? By no means; for not to mention their inacceſſibility, men, who thus by a regular train of accidents become maſters of a country by honeſt means, and improve it by robuſt induſtry, are not ſo eaſily diſlodged as we may imagine; hiſtory furniſhes abundance of inſtances of ſuch combinations of men, in a ſhort time, becoming formidable; and even in General Oglethorpe's time a German with conceptions ſimilar to thoſe above named was found among the Creek ſavages, who, had he not engaged in his ſcheme intirely alone, and therefore by the Creeks, (although reluctantly) through the General's importunity and intrigues betrayed into

his

his enemies hands, it would have been no wonder if ſuch a man, with ſuch ideas, joined to the amazing preſence of mind and intrepidity he is ſaid to have been poſſeſſed of. would have ſo neſtled himſelf in the ſouthern part of America, that we might have had no occaſion to think of forming the two provinces of Florida in 1763; and we may venture to affirm; that had not the ſettlement of Georgia, juſt at that criſis become the object of Britain's attention, he would have gone on unnoticed till he had formed all the neighbouring nations into a regular governed body, too ſtrong to be cruſhed by any power from abroad. But laying aſide this reaſoning, which i ſtill inſiſt upon is not only apparently probable; but may be looked upon as certainly to happen, unleſs the preſent bounds of the ſeveral provinces are enlarged; there are other cogent reaſons to induce Britain to change her conduct in reſpect to this branch of her politicks, ſhe ought to let the Americans ſpread themſelves under regular governments over the continent, that they may be planters of ſtaples, and thereby find the means of employing more hands in the mother country, by obtaining from her ſuch of the neceſſaries of life as they find themſelves obliged to have from Europe, at an eaſier rate than they could procure them among themſelves. By ſuffering the upper latitude of the Miſſiſſippi, and the banks of the Ohio to be cultivated under the influence of a regular and civil government, we ſhall increaſe ſuch plenty of neceſſaries in the mother country, that all connection with foreigners who have the balance of trade againſt Britain will become needleſs, any further than in ſelling them

them Britiſh manufactures for money, inſtead of what is now the caſe of ſending bullion, beſides the ſtated quota of manufactures, in exchange for hemp, iron, flax, and other ſuch neceſſary and bulky articles. When we conſider, that during the period of time in which theſe higher countries enjoyed and were protected by a ſtate of regular government under the French, one winter (ſo long ago as twenty-eight years) furniſhed new Orleans with eight hundred thouſand weight of good flour from Ilinois*, we muſt be ſenſible at what a reaſonable rate this and other neceſſaries of life could be procured at New-Orleans and Penſacola, and from thence to Eaſt-Florida and the Weſt-Indies, where the Pennſylvanians and New-Yorkers at preſent inſiſt on their own price, in ſo much that flour now is commonly at from 20*ſ.* to 22*ſ.* per cent their currency at home; whereas I remember that even in 1760, during the war, 16s. and 18s. was thought a high price. This alone demonſtrates the neceſſity of ſuch a meaſure; would not ſuch a freſh ſupply ſpread its influence even acroſs the Atlantic to the poor in Britain? no doubt it would, the navigation down theſe rivers is nothing in difficulty or expence compared with that of the European rivers, from whence the materials come for the ſupply of Britain. The inhabitants of the upper counties of Virginia and Pennſylvania would be obliged to drop the bulky commodities they now raiſe, if they ſaw the inhabitants of upper Miſſiſſippi, the Ohio, &c. raiſe the ſame with redoubled ardor, and in a

* Du Pratz.

perhaps four-fold quantity, at the ſame time bringing them to market at much leſs than half the expence themſelves can do it at, and inſtead of the ſaid coarſe, heavy, and bulky articles, they would neceſſarily be induced to think ſeriouſly of a vigorous culture of wine, ſilk, oil, and ſimilar neceſſary, light, and valuable products, able to bear the heavy tax of land carriage to which thoſe countries are by nature ſubjected. In caſe of a rupture with any power who ſhould think proper to attack the ſouthern provinces, eſpecially Weſt-Florida, would they not moſt naturally be ſupplied with proviſions, ammunition, and ſoldiers by way of the river from thoſe ſettlements in the higher latitudes? nor is it on account of hemp and flax, &c. alone, which may be ſaid to be ſtill objects of ſpeculation, we ſee the tobacco culture which is a branch of vaſt importance to the revenue as it were daily mouldering away into its primitive non-exiſtence, and therefore new lands for this culture ought to be found and improved; the want of this ſupply of the revenue will ſoon be felt in the treaſury, and Britain will find too late that ſhe would have done well to have gone not only to the expence of the eſtabliſhment of theſe new provinces, but even to the expence of that tremendous *bug-bear*, a *war*, with the remains of the ancient inimical tribes of ſavages; unleſs indeed, ſhe intended the proclamation of October 7, 1763, as a meer matter of form, and wiſhed the back ſettlements quietly to ſpread themſelves without any expence to the mother-country; but ſhould this be the caſe, the miſtakes of ſuch policy I think are fully refuted in the foregoing

pages;

pages: the ſpreading of people over the continent will make them produce great quantities of ſtaples, and Britain hereby would ſecure a period for the dependance of the colonies upon her, while ſhe would have nothing to do but provide markets for the produce of the labour of her ſons. All Europe is ſenſible of this; every writer i meet with is either of my opinion, or abſurdly and continually contradicts and confutes his own maintenance of the contrary in his own writings: i beg leave, to quote a very ſenſible Frenchman (whoſe name I know not) on this ſubject, "it is true," ſays he, "that the free and happy ſituation of North-America, may much diſorder our European ſyſtems, * particularly, if the Engliſh colonies attain to the not paying impoſed duties. Vaſt, fertile, and new tracts, where neither cuſtoms, taxes, nor military troops, will take place, becauſe they need fear no invaſion, will deſerve the moſt ſerious attention from all our governments; and policy will be obliged more than ever to turn all her views on the ſide of beneficence. Thoſe ſtates which will be lateſt in uſing this reflection, will find themſelves utterly incapable of mending the evil; for the greatneſs of puniſhments or weight of ſlavery only ſerve to increaſe ill-blood." This is not the way to mend the matter, and i think certainly that no remedy will poſſibly be found out againſt ſuch a number of evils, as muſt neceſſarily attend the keeping

* The French word is *Combenaiſones Europeanes*, which may mean European alliances, combinations, or junctions, but I cannot find Engliſh ſenſe in uſing either, therefore I ſuppoſe he means ſyſtems, or he may have meant European plots which the word alſo bears.

keeping the colonies confined to their preſent bounds, whereas, by only allowing people to ſpread over the country, they will all be effectually prevented.

To give my reader an idea of what room there is yet left for people to plant themſelves, i muſt tell him, that between the latitudes of 31 to 46, which i judge to be the moſt habitable country from the Atlantic to the Pacific ocean, and which cannot fail by the courſe of nature to become the country of thoſe Americans who were originally planted from England, Holland, and France, and emigrated from Germany, on, and to the ſhores which bound the Atlantic weſtward, and who now generally ſpeak Engliſh; within theſe limits I ſay are contained no leſs than two thouſand one hundred and thirty-five millions, and forty thouſand ſquare acres, excluſive of the known waters; at leaſt twice as much as the vaſt empire of *China* is ſaid to contain, and allowing each family to poſſeſs fifty acres of land, there is room for forty two millions, ſeven hundred and eight families to live here. To conclude this diſcourſe on the ſettling of new provinces, i will juſt obſerve that the daily emigrations of the people beyond the frontiers, even at the riſque of the dreadful ſituation of being expoſed to ſavage incurſions, is the moſt evident proof of the neceſſity of this meaſure to the at preſent crouded Americans, if not to Britain. Likewiſe it is a proof how little the preſent Americans who inhabit the frontier countries value ſo inſignificant a foe as the remains of the ancient inimical tribes of ſavages, or even the proſecutions in law of ſuper-intendants, their delegates,

delegates, and other formerly uſeful officers.

To ſay a word or two about the political hiſtory of theſe provinces, may be thought incumbent on me, but little can be ſaid of moment on that ſubject as yet; except that Major Ogilvie in taking poſſeſſion of the eaſtern province, by his impolitick behaviour cauſed all the Spaniards to remove to Havanna, which was a deadly wound to the province, never to be cured again, notwithſtanding the inviting means uſed by Governor Grant, who ſucceeded him, to retain the remainder, and to make them all return;—that Governor Grant uſed all poſſible means to encourage indigo and rice planting;—that the crown would not allow the transfer of Spaniſh landed intereſt to be good, although mentioned in the articles of peace;—that the ſaid governor reigned ſupreme without controul, and in peace, notwithſtanding the frequent murmurs of the people, and the preſentments of the grand juries, occaſioned by his not calling an aſſembly, which they thought was a duty incumbent on him;—there was alſo a complaint of the contingent money of five thouſand pounds per annum, for ſeven years, not being ſo very viſibly expended on highways, bridges, ferries. and ſuch other neceſſary things as the people could have wiſhed; finally, Governor Grant departed the province for Britain in 1772, on account of his bad ſtate of health, having a pompous addreſs preſented to him by his council, which was re-echoed by a few of the inhabitants;—that he was ſucceeded by Major Moultrie as lieutenant-governor, who was again ſucceeded by Patrick Tonyn, Eſq; as governor in chief, who enjoys the command

there

there now;—that in the northern extremity of the province at the mouth of St. Mary's river, a place is now founded, which, to all appearance, by its ſituation and ſuperior entrance into its harbour compared with St. Auguſtine, will draw the ſeat of government away from the latter;—that the cultivation of many articles, eſpecially indigo, begins to wear a pleaſing and promiſing aſpect.

Concerning Weſt-Florida, i can only ſay, that diſcord has early made her appearance in the counſels of this province;—that diſaffection to Governor Johnſon has been the occaſion of its being ſo late as it was in rearing its head;—that Montfort Brown, Eſq; ſucceeded him as commander in chief in quality of lieutenant-governor, who was ſucceeded by —— Elliot, Eſq; who unhappily ended his days; when the lieutenant-governor again ſucceeded him, and was a ſecond time replaced by Governor Cheſter, who is univerſally eſteemed, and under whoſe auſpices the province is in a thriving condition.

About March 1772, the freeholders being met for the purpoſe of electing their repreſentatives, but finding that the writs mentioned a continuance of the aſſembly for three years, (whereas they had heretofore held annual elections) they now added this condition to their votes, that the new elected members were to continue only one year; the mode of return on the writ the governor took ill, and refuſed to accept it, inſiſting that the members ſhould be returned for three years, but all in vain, the freeholders remained inflexible, and rather than not have annual elections, they choſe to remain without repreſentatives,

which

which has been the caſe ever ſince. The ſettlement of this province goes on very rapidly, and its different valuable products increaſe a-pace.

I ſhall now treat of a ſubject in which I confeſs myſelf not to have ſo much ſkill as I could wiſh; i ſpeak of it from ſuch experience as my temper, inquiſitive into the myſteries of nature, has furniſhed me with during my ſtay in this country; i mean the diſeaſes moſt frequent in thoſe provinces. But by way of prologue, i ſhall enquire a little into the univerſally dreaded, though chimerical unhealthineſs of this climate. Dr. Lind* enumerates ſome proofs or ſigns of an unhealthy country, which are as follows, viz. 1ſt. Sudden and great alterations in the air, from intolerable heat, and chilling cold; this is perceived as ſoon as the ſun is ſet, and for the moſt part is accompanied with a very heavy dew, and ſhews an unhealthy ſwampy ſoil; this is perfectly the caſe on St. John's river, and about Naſſau-river, in Eaſt-Florida, likewiſe at Mobille, and Campbellton, in Weſt-Florida. At Penſacola, and from thence Eaſt: there is little or none of this perceivable; at Orleans, and on the Miſſiſſippi i was not ſenſible of any ſudden alterations of this kind: and on enquiry found it not to be generally complained of. Neither of thoſe provinces are ſo ſubject to this unhealthy variability as Georgia and Carolina, eſpecially the laſt; however, i do not find that any perſon need be much under uneaſineſs about this any where, not even a newly arrived European; the chief care neceſſary to ſuch at ſeaſons when theſe ſudden alterations take

place

* 2d edition p. 1. ch. 4. ſect. 2, p. 137, et ſeq. London 1771.

place, is to avoid being expoſed to the night air, and after ſun ſet, to add ſome more clothes to thoſe worn in the day time; and if on a journey in the woods, never forget keeping a very large fire at night in order to rarify this dangerous air. His ſecond ſign is, thick noiſome fogs, ariſing chiefly after ſun-ſet, from the vallies, and more particularly from the mud, ſlime, and other impurities; this i never perceived to a great degree in any part of theſe provinces; St. John's alone is very ſubject to thick naſty fogs of all kinds, the ſea-ſide where ſoft ſalt marſhes are frequent, is often troubled with theſe, and theſe marſhes a little before rain emit a moſt horrid, and to me a ſuffocating ſtench; the northern part of Eaſt-Florida is very full of theſe kind of marſhes, in Georgia and Carolina they cover a prodigious ſurface; the marſhes in the ſouth eaſt of Eaſt-Florida are of a different nature, and in Weſt-Florida i remember very few of this kind; i have, however, never heard any thing ſaid contrary to a prevailing opinion of great ſalubrity in dwelling near the ſea ſide, even among the thickeſt of theſe marſhes; nor have i ever heard any notice taken of the above ſtench by the inhabitants, except as being a certain indication of rain; where this kind of marſhes are ſituate in brackiſh water, the ſituation is beyond doubt very unhealthy, the wan complexion and miſerable mien of the generality of the inhabitants of ſuch diſtricts too plainly evinces it. We know by experience, that all ſuch fenny countries on every part of the earth labour under the ſame unhealthy calamity, but the comfort is, their areas are every where very ſmall when compared with

with the more ſalutary ſituations which abound almoſt univerſally in every province, and in every climate.

The third is, uncommon ſwarms of flies, gnats, and other inſects, which attend putrid air, and unhealthy places covered with wood; the firſt of theſe is not common here, except at indigo works; and if theſe, according to my former caution* be a little remote from the dwelling, I never ſaw nor heard of any bad conſequences with regard to health attending them. I have already mentioned the bad effects of theſe voracious vermin on cattle of all kind at an indigo work; gnats, here called muſquitos, are vaſtly numerous in ſome ſpots, but after we have paſſed ſome diſtance the brackiſh waters in every river, they diminiſh, and at laſt we find none; the Miſſiſſippi however is an exception, but on this river they are not in ſuch plenty at the freſhes as below, at the *rigolets*, on pearl river, and at the *Riviere aux Boeufs*, and on Dolphin-iſland, likewiſe in *Santa-Roſa* bay, and in the bays of St. Andrews, St. Joſephs, and at St. George's ſound and iſlands, they are intollerable, and all the ſea coaſt of both provinces is exceedingly peſtered with them. I travelled acroſs the peninſula in 1769, in the months of June, July, Auguſt, and September, but found none at all in the interior part; i never heard theſe being attended by any fatal diſeaſe except their troubleſome bites, which ſometimes cauſe inflammations, eſpecially in the legs; but the inhabitants of the weſtern province ſo effectualy fortify themſelves againſt thoſe vermin with muſqueto nets, tents, and

* Page 139.

Baires,* that whether at home or travelling, they are not in the leaſt danger from the attacks of this terrible and bold, though dimunitive enemy, whoſe deſtruction gradually takes place as the woods daily diminiſh ; in very dry hot ſummers, ſcarce any of theſe vermin are ſeen ; a very dry hot air cauſing the deaths of numberleſs *animaculæ* of every kind, their effluvia, even of thoſe that are imperceptible to the naked eye, ariſing or exhaling from ponds, marſhes, ſwamps, &c. muſt ſpread a great quantity of noxious vapours through the atmoſphere, § and conſequently corrupt the air, and ſpread diſeaſe throughout their vicinity ; this misfortune will likewiſe ceaſe on opening the country, till then let me adviſe every new comer, particularly a perſon of a groſs habit of body, to be careful of his conſtitution, a wine-bibber or rum guzzler, with ſuch a plethoric habit, can hardly avoid falling a prey to this bad air.

His fourth, is the quick corruption of butcher's meat, &c. this, if the caſe at all in any of theſe provinces, is not common, i remember indeed to have heard a complaint of this happening at Penſacola in 1765, which was a ſickly ſeaſon, but in all my journies through theſe provinces I never experienced it, on the contrary I could always by ſome means or other preſerve my veniſon, or beef, when there was a neceſſity for doing it.

The fifth reaſon, ſays the Doctor, is a ſort of ſandy ſoil, among others he ſays, ſuch as that at Penſacola ; i beg leave to inform the Doctor, that the ſand about Penſacola, and throughout theſe provinces,

* *Baires* are a kind of tent made of light coarſe cloth, like canvas gauze, called by the French *villemontiers*.

§ See page 15 of this volume.

provinces, is a coarſe, gritty and gravelly ſand of various colours, though chiefly red and white, that on this ſandy ſoil many excellent ſalubrious herbs grow, which ſerve as food to innumerable herds of cattle, and when cleared they are improvable by culture; this is not the caſe with the hot ſandy deſarts of South-America, Africa, and Aſia, over which the *famiel* wind paſſes, nor do i believe that the oldeſt perſon in Florida remembers any ſudden, hot and ſuffocating guſts, or blaſts, from which he has ever been obliged to turn his face in order to draw breath; there are no open plains of ſand in North-America, they are all covered with trees rooted in the lower ſtrata of theſe ſandy tracts; the only plain of ſand i know without trees, is at, or near the head of St. Lucia, in Eaſt-Florida, which however is not extenſive, and to it numerous herds of roe-deer reſort during night from the adjacent woods; i think, therefore, that neither of the Floridas have any ill conſequences to dread from their land winds; moreover, if we conſider, that the land-winds come from the weſt and north-weſt; geography will tell us, that they range over innumerable acres of oak land, conſequently clay ground,* and that only the ſea coaſts, and from twenty to about an hundred miles off, are any ways ſandy; which being ſo conſtantly fanned by the wholeſome ſea-breezes, (ſo remarkable in theſe provinces) could not have any fatal effects, even if the ground was of the nature of the Lybian deſarts; thus we ſee again how men reaſoning from mere theory, are liable to commit miſtakes.

To

* Excepting the few hommocks near the ſea, which are oak land, but moſt of them ſand.

To treat of the diſeaſes to which the human frame is moſt liable here, in the ſame regular manner, as i believe i have done of every preceeding article, i will divide them into two claſſes, viz. acute and chronic, and the firſt again into two orders, viz. thoſe of the ſummer, and thoſe of the winter.

Fevers are the firſt of the ſummer diſeaſes; the ancients have ages ago made an obſervation, that the ſeaſon of the reign of this terrible diſorder was always preceeded by an atmoſphere laden with great heats, and much rain, for ſome time; the modern writers ſeem to me to be generally of the ſame opinion; this is exactly the caſe in all the ſouthern provinces; for fevers begin to take place in ſome diſtricts more, in ſome leſs, about the latter end of July, and in Auguſt, and continue throughout September, and part of October, juſt the ſeaſon immediately ſucceeding our greateſt rains; and moſt violent heats; here i will notice a * remark which i have read long ago, and i find it confirmed in all climates, "That the middle of the third month was obſerved to be the period of the greateſt rage of epidemical diſorders." Thoſe diſtricts which lay near to low rice fields, particularly in back ſwamps) and to ſuch indigo works, where the planter is obliged to make reſervoirs of water, are moſt liable to theſe diſorders, after, and during the latter part of an exceſſive drought; becauſe in thoſe neighbourhoods the air is at ſuch times moſt prodigiouſly loaden with corrupt moiſt effluvia

* Inquiry concerning the cauſe of the peſtilence, and the diſeaſes in fleets and armies. London 1759.

effluvia; for this ſame reaſon, cool rainy ſummers will make thoſe places more healthy than dryer ſpots, becauſe during ſuch a ſeaſon all the above mentioned noxious exhalations do not take place in ſo great a degree, and the air is kept cool by the frequency of the ſhowers; however ſuch ſituations will never be ſo common in the Floridas as in Carolina or Georgia, the quantity of good wholeſome freſh running water being infinitely greater, and conſequently little neceſſity of making ſtagnating ponds or dams.

It muſt be allowed, that all fevers however diſſimilar in appearance, proceed from the ſame origin; nature only works with more or leſs violence to rid herſelf of what is detrimental to her.

The *Ephemera*, or day fever, occaſioned by a meer increaſe of the velocity of the blood, by means of a fit of drunkenneſs, or debauch, or originating from violent exerciſe during the heat of the day is too frequently ſeen here; but as it is ſeldom of a longer continuance than eighteen or twenty hours, it has not often dangerous conſequences, and may be avoided by every perſon; i ſhall content myſelf with barely obſerving, that ſome cooling acidulated liquid aliments will ſoon abate its violence, bleeding may likewiſe be of uſe to reſtrain its force.

The continual fever, or inflammatory fever, is ſometimes, though rarely experienced in this climate, but ſeldom attended by thoſe dreadful ſymptoms and fatality, which accompany the ſame kind of fever, though of a more violent claſs in the countries immediately between the tropics: this, in its common form laſts about ten

or

or twelve days, beginning to abate its violence in general after the ſeventh; the fourth or fifth is often fatal. Iam perſuaded, that whenever the yellow fever has made its appearance in the Floridas, it was imported from Jamaica or Havannah, as was the caſe in 1765, which (by the way) was almoſt univerſally an unhealthy *Æra*, as well in Europe as elſewhere. This continual fever begins with an exceſſive heat of the whole body, continued, though not violent head ach, great drought of the tongue and palate, and conſequently a continual deſire to drink; thoſe people who die of this diſorder, generally depart on the fourth day, and i am of opinion, that few are carried off by it, except ſuch as are kept too cloſe confined from the freſh air; i would recommend the keeping the ſun out of the room, but to admit as much air as will gently ventilate it; a cooling diet, ſuch as rice gruel, barley water, infuſions of baum, or ſage, and lemonade, which is lime juice, water, and very little ſugar; lime juice, ſyrup of lemons, and currant jelly ſhould moderately enter into every part of the patient's diet; avoid all ſalt, ſpices, ſpirituous liquors or generous wines; a gentle purge of glauber ſalt, with a few grains of *kermes mineral*, and ſome drops of oil of mint is generally given on the firſt appearance of the diſeaſe; the effects of this are forwarded by frequent draughts of warm chicken broth. During the operation of this, avoid all acids: bleeding (eſpecially if the diſeaſe makes a violent attack, and the patient is of a plethoric habit) is indiſpenſably neceſſary, the patient ought by all means to avoid motion, and notwithſtanding the above caution of admit-

ing

ing air in the room, keep himself covered, and be careful not to throw his bed cloths a-side. If the symptoms abate after the above mixture, emetics are commonly subscribed; if it still continues, particularly if attended with *delirium*, lethargic symptoms, or their reverse, blisters are applied; and in great watchfulness some *laudanum* is used; if worms are suspected, an infusion of †Indian pink root, (a very common plant here) leaves, wood, and all, is made use of as tea; but this plant possessing a pretty strong narcotic quality, ought to be used with caution: in excessive heats some grains of *sal nitri* are added to the liquors administered to the patient, and as soon as the fever begins to abate, some orange, lime or lemon juice, saturated with salt of wormwood, is given by a small tea-cup full every two hours.

The yellow fever being sometimes imported here, it may be necessary to describe this *Proteus* among diseases, which I have frequently seen, and which i myself have suffered in Jamaica under one of its various forms. I chuse to follow the description of *Dr. Rouppe*, in his *de morb. navigant.* as quoted by *Dr. Lind*, because I find no other author who has done it so exactly, and if i had not seen his account i should not perhaps have recollected half the symtoms he mentions, altho' i now perfectly remember to have seen that dire distemper in every shape he paints it in. He seems to speak of it as an illness to which seamen only are subject in that climate (*Curacoa*;) he may have been induced to think so by the disorder not raging on shore; the florid complexion of most

† Lonicœra.

moſt of the people in the iſland ſufficiently ſhewing it to be a very healthy ſpot; but I find by his deſcription, that it was the real yellow fever contracted at *St. Euſtatius*; he calls it the putrid colliquative or ſpotted fever; it raged in the Dutch ſhip of war Princeſs Carolina, on board of which this phyſician arrived at *St. Euſtatius* on the 1ſt of Auguſt, 1760, on the 11th they ſailed from thence for *Curacoa*, which harbour they entered on the 19th, and then (whether he means on the paſſage, or the very day he arrived, ſeems doubtful) twenty people were ſick, ſome of theſe had head-aches without fevers, and ſome were afflicted with a true bilious cholic; but they were by an eaſy cure again reſtored to the enjoyment of their former health: the ſenſe of his account of the diſorder, I take to be as follows, viz.

"In the beginning of our ſtay in the iſle of "*Curacoa*, as before mentioned, the diſeaſes "which occurred moſt frequently were head-"aches and bilious cholics, which were ſoon "cured; this changed into true choleric com-"plaints, gradually increaſing with pain much "more dangerous than the former, wonderfully "tormenting the patients: the diſorder begun "with a very great burning heat about the *præ-*"*cordia*, (ſides of the upper part of the belly) "griping ſtools, great anxiety and uneaſineſs, "theſe were followed by bilious ſtools and vo-"mitings, with great loſs of ſtrength, many of "them being bedewed with abundance of cold "ſweat; if this continued, eſpecially if a fever "came on, (which was the manner in which it "ſeized ſome with a high pulſe, which continued "in moſt about ten hours,) then the lips began

"to

" to ſwell. and a ghaſtly paleneſs ſeized the face;
" afterwards, the fever abating, they vomited
" abundance of dark coloured blood; at this pe-
" riod they generally died, or within a few hours
" after the appearance of theſe ſymptoms. Thoſe
" who voided the above named and ſome blacker
" matter by ſtool, emitted a terrible offenſive
" ſmell; but ſome of theſe were with difficulty
" cured; in the ſame manner it happened to
" thoſe, who ſuffering of the fever, had, how-
" ever no evacuation; others were only ſeized
" with a common bilious fever, and as much as
" i could judge, the major part of thoſe were
" young men, or middle aged, robuſt, and be-
" fore ſickneſs the briſkeſt and moſt cheerful;
" they had a heat about the *præcordium*, they vo-
" mited bile, or were making attempts to vomit
" and had an unquenchable thirſt; ſome of theſe
" frequently found themſelves cold, and by turns
" heats would ſeize them; then ſucceeded a hot
" itching of the whole body, with a high, full,
" and quick pulſe; the tongue was yellowiſh or
" whitiſh- often encompaſſed with a green border
" on the edges, and always wet or moiſt.

" The diſeaſe continued in ſome to the ſecond,
" in others to the third day; then the heat would
" abate of itſelf, and the natural pulſe returned
" ſuddenly or unawares, which by little and little
" would ſink, and at length become ſmall and
" tremulous, in ſome there appeared *petechiæ*
" about the breaſt, arms, and inſide of the thighs;
" in others, large livid ſpots appeared; the
" ſtrength of ſome was by all this ſo exceedingly
" exhauſted, that on the leaſt motion, the patient
" would ſwoon; beſides an abundant ſweat would

" ariſe on the whole body; the patient moreover
" would be anxious, fretful, uneaſy, ſlightly de-
" lirious, very inattentive, valuing nothing, com-
" plaining of nothing, eluding queſtions, and yet
" at the ſame time almoſt always anſwering per-
" tinently to them; in ſome, upon the declining
" of the pulſe, a fiery heat would ariſe about the
" ſtomach, the lips ſwelling a little, the face be-
" coming ghaſtly, ſhortly after they vomited diſ-
" coloured matter, and at length died; others
" would be conſumed by heat and griping ſtools,
" and diſcharged corrupt, ſtinking, and almoſt
" black blood by ſtool; ſome in the third, and
" others in the fourth day, would begin to acquire
" a yellow tinge in the white of the eye, and on
" the ſkin, which was an evil ſign; moreover,
" the tongue would from day to day become
" whiter, and at length tremulous; they would
" always lay on their backs, thus as the diſeaſe
" increaſed, ſometimes on the ſecond, third, or at
" lateſt on the fourth day, an eaſy, calm death
" would follow.

" Blood drawn from the veins, in the heat of
" the fever; was bright red: it concreted and ſepa-
" rated a yellow *ſerum*, juſt as in Europe. Thoſe,
" who by meer dint of ſtrength reſiſted the diſ-
" eaſe, and reached the fifth or ſeventh day,
" would have the whole body almoſt covered with
" ſmall boils, or little painful red pimples, very
" difficult to be brought to a ſuppuration, re-
" ſembling ſmall pox of the confluent kind.

" At length, moſt of the diſeaſed, particularly
" thoſe who had reached beyond thirty years of
" age, and were of a bad habit of body, when
" they were ſeized with the diſorder were over-

" whelmed

" whelmed with pain and heat about the ſtomach,
" with a continual retching, but yet bringing up
" little or nothing; in ſome the pulſe in-
" creaſed for ſome hours, and again appeared in
" a ſhort time to be in its natural ſtate; it became
" low, the ſkin poſſeſſed its natural heat, the
" tongue was moiſt and white; on the firſt day
" of the diſeaſe a copious ſweat would break out
" over the whole body, but no ſpots appeared,
" thoſe whoſe ſweat was little or none, had copious
" black and very fœtid diſcharges, were troubled
" with gripings, and would often faint away ſud-
" denly; when the evacuations were trifling,
" ceaſed, or otherways remarkably leſſened, and
" but little ſweat pervaded; then the patients
" ſuffered greatly and were very reſtleſs; on the
" contrary, if it broke forth plentifully, they
" found themſelves much better.

" Laſtly, in all its ſtages from beginning to
" end they were afflicted with conſtant watchings.

" A worthy lad about eighteen years old, who
" found himſelf well in the morning early, was,
" about 10 o'clock of the ſame morning taken
" with a head ach, and other feveriſh ſymptoms,
" he had a high full and quick pulſe, he obſti-
" nately refuſed being blooded: the ſecond day
" at evening he voided abundance of dark diſco-
" loured blood by vomit, and the third he died.
" Another of about ſixteen was well in the even-
" ing, but we found him next morning ill, and
" utterly deprived of all ſenſe, i examined his
" body, which was ſwelled and overſpread with
" livid ſpots, his pulſe almoſt entirely gone;
" ſome black blood of a ſweetiſh taſte flowed from
" his left ear and out of his noſtrils, which con-

" tinued

" tinued to ooze out ſome hours after his diſeaſe,
" the corpſe in a ſhort time became wholly diſ-
" coloured and livid, emitting a very diſagreeable
" ſmell."

The French call this diſorder *mal de Siam*, ſuppoſing it originally imported from thence into the iſlands; the Spaniards *vomito preto*, or black vomit; the Dutch *geele koorts*, which laſt conveys the ſame idea as the Engliſh yellow fever.

In general, when fevers are violent, the practice which prevails at preſent, is to have recourſe to antimonial medicines, and as ſoon as a remiſſion is brought about: the bark is adminiſtered in large doſes.

Intermittents are endemial in all low ſituations, thus we ſee in all the provinces to the ſouthward, particular places remarkable for a continuance of this diſorder in them, ſuch as more eſpecially Jackſonburg, in South-Carolina, Savannah, in Georgia, Rolles-Town, and moſt of the ſettlements on St. John's, in Eaſt-Florida, at Campbell-town, near the mouth of the Eſcambe and at Mobile in Weſt-Florida; this diſeaſe attacks people much in the ſame form as the continued fever, the firſt fit frequently laſting three days without intermiſſion; phyſicians treat it nearly in the ſame manner as the laſt, but i have obſerved, that they are very averſe to taking blood from a patient afflicted with this diſorder, ſaying, that bleeding is a ſure way to prolong the diſeaſe, although ſometimes a ſmall matter of blood is taken from people of a very groſs habit of body, when the returning fits ſeemed to continue longer in point of time than at the firſt, the ſame diet is obſerved as in the con-

tinued

tinued fever, except when the patient is very weak, when ſtrong broths well ſeparated from the fat are frequently given; if delirious, or comatoſe ſymptoms with pains in the back, &c, make their appearance, cooling medicines are uſed, during the paroxyſms, Doctor James's powder or other antimonials, and on intermiſſion the bark in copious doſes is adminiſtered with ſucceſs, and in obſtinate head-aches recourſe is had to bliſters.

This is a very tedious diſeaſe, and whoever is afflicted with it ſhould not too ſoon judge himſelf cured, but continue taking a bitter infuſion, compoſed of the bark of the root of the *magnolia major* (which the French on the Miſſiſſippi ſubſtitute in lieu of Jeſuit's bark) with Virginia heart, ſnake-root, rue, *ſal abſynth:* and pink root, in good Madeira or Liſbon wine.

People in general, ſuppoſe them even obliged to remain on the ſickly ſpot during the fatal ſeaſon, which is autumn, may by care, in a great meaſure ſhun this tedious illneſs, ſuch as living on a more generous diet, eſpecially animal food high ſeaſoned, and a moderate glaſs of wine; avoiding a too great expoſure to the then frequent ſudden changes of air. They ought to uſe the cold bath often, wear garlic and camphire in the pockets, not expoſe themſelves to rain, and above all keep warm and dry feet, and if got wet by rain not to change their clothes too ſuddenly; never go out of a morning faſting, but before you go to work, buſineſs, &c. eat a piece of bread, and drink a glaſs of the bitter infuſion; avoid the night air, and keep ſome fire in the houſe, particularly in the mornings and

evenings

evenings to rarify the damp air in the rooms, especially in the bed rooms which ought never to be on a lower floor, and ſhould be in the eaſtern parts of the building expoſed to the morning ſun: by obſerving theſe rules the conſtitution of the human body will be leſs diſpoſed to receive the impreſſions of a bad air.

An excellent thing to be given the negroes on a plantation before they go to work, is a wine glaſs full of the above bitter ingredients, and garlic infuſed in rum; and they ſhould be encouraged to chew and ſmoke tobacco.

When a perſon is ſeized with a fit of the ague, he ought by no means to delay going to bed, and drink a draught of lime juice, and powder of chalk, while it is fermenting in the glaſs; this will bring on a ſweat, and ſhorten the fit, or in the hot fit uſe ſome opiate if the patient is not delirious, this ought to be done as often as the paroxyſms return.

The nervous fever, likewiſe called the ſlow fever, is known by a ſmall, quick and low pulſe, and by not affecting the patient with ſuch violent heats as the others fevers, but with greater oppreſſion about the *præcordium*; it does not make them ſo thirſty; the tongue is at firſt unuſually moiſt, and looks white, though at laſt it becomes dry, and looks brown or inflamed; continual heats are felt in the palms of the hands, heats and chills return alternately very quick, a copious clammy weakening ſweat, exceſſive lowneſs of ſpirits, reſtleſsneſs, being drowſy without power of ſleeping, pain and giddineſs of the head, ringing in the ears, and if it laſts long, the tendons are often affected with a ſort of cramp; deafneſs,

deliriums,

deliriums, continual lethargic fits; inſenſibility and ſtupor are the conſtant attendants of this diſorder when in its laſt ſtages.

This is a moſt treacherous diſorder, and by affecting the ſufferer with only ſlight ſymptoms of wearineſs and weakneſs, attended with frequent yawnings and ſtretchings, a ſlight giddineſs and loſs of appetite, and a great heat in the forehead, makes people neglect an early application to the phyſican, and thus they endanger themſelves much, though in people of a robuſt conſtitution who are much expoſed to the ſun, it will often appear for the firſt day or two with violent ſymptoms; this fever will laſt ſometimes for twenty days or more without any apparent abatement; it generally attacks people who have been expoſed to unuſual fatigue, or ſuch as are naturally of a weak conſtitntion. Vomits are the remedy to which recourſe is moſt uſually had in this diſorder.

Phyſicians ſteadily, and almoſt totally avoid bleeding and purging, till after a free uſe of the *Ipecacuana*, and even then their cathartic preſcriptions are rarely any other than manna and ſalts, and after the gentle purges obtained by this method, they order a free uſe of rich chicken broth, and the above deſcribed juice of lemons ſaturated with *ſal abſynth:* this they generally continue until the diſeaſe changes into an intermittent fever, and then treat it in the manner laſt mentioned; frequently alſo applying bliſters.

This fever more particularly than any other diſorder, bears hardeſt on the patient towards ſunſet. The diet commonly preſcribed is ſago, chicken broth and panado, with ſome ſmall matter of wine and loaf ſugar in the firſt and laſt;

infuſions

infuſions of ſage and baum, together with wine whey, are the drink moſtly thought proper during the continuance of this diſorder.

The uſe of bark is generally blamed as productive of dropſy; jaundice, the ague cake,* and other inveterate chronical diſorders, but it is certain that the bark is blameleſs; it is the fault of the phyſicians, who too late and with too much caution uſe this bleſſed remedy, which ſeems as purpoſely deſigned by Providence to relieve us in thoſe tedious diſorders; or it is that of the patient himſelf, who, prejudiced againſt this excellent remedy, refuſes to take it till it is too late, and thereby brings upon himſelf the above diſeaſes, which are conſequences of the fevers, not of this great ſpecific.

The above mentioned fevers and unuſual hardſhips in travelling, &c. as well as exceſſes at plentiful tables full of variety, often bring on a ſevere bloody flux eſpecially in autumn, and if this makes its appearance with hard dry and bloody ſtools, the diſeaſe is dangerous; briſk purges and clyſters of Caſtile ſoap, and ſome of the hot ſeeds are uſed to expell theſe; when the deſired end is obtained, gentle emetics are called in; i have known people find great relief from a decoction of logwood and pomgranate ſkins, others again it would not help in the leaſt; a new honey comb incloſed in an apple ſcooped out, and then roaſted before the fire, has often proved a ſpeedy and very effectual remedy; calcined

* A hardneſs in the region of the ſpleen, one of the conſequences of long continued fevers, and by the Dutch Creoles diſtinguiſhed by this name, they call it in their own language *koek in de buyck*, or ſimply *de koek*.

calcined hartſhorn, a nauſeous medicine, is nonſenſe; bark of *ſumach* is a good medicine, but there being a dangerous kind, it ought to be gathered by a ſkilful hand; the bark of the *liquidambar ſtyraciflua*; *aceris folio* mentioned in page 20, together with the gum exuding from the ſame tree, is generally found efficacious; a wine glaſs full of the juice of lemons mixed with ſome common ſalt has often proved a moſt excellent, ſafe, and general ſpecific; the frequent chewing of cinnamon and camomile flowers, eſpecially when a weak ſtomach vexes the patient, has a noble effect; avoid all vegetable food except rice, eat roaſted rather than boiled fleſh; ſalted beef need not to be avoided; uſe often veal, jellies and ſalop; uſe a great deal of muſtard; i know by the experience of many as well as my own, that Dr. Barry's obſervation of vegetables not being ſo eaſily aſſimilated as animal food, is in the ſtricteſt ſenſe univerſally true, and in an obſtinate continuance of this diſorder, vegetables even our common wheaten bread are not at all digeſted, but moſt generally paſs through the body unaltered. When this diſeaſe changes into a chronic habitual flux, it will be neceſſary to uſe pills of equal parts of rhubarb and *ipecacuana*, mixed with ſome liquid opiate, and uſe weak lime water for common drink: if this does not prove a ſpecific, let the patient be removed to ſome other clime, for no remedy will affect that diſorder in the ſame climate, where it was originally contracted, claret or port ought to be their conſtant drink in this diſeaſe, and ſpirituous liquors ought by all means to be avoided; rum, a curſed bane of health and of ſociety; is too often

and indiſcriminately applied to every diſeaſe as an univerſal *arcaum.*

The *cholera morbus* is likewiſe a conſequence of intemperate meals, and when it is not occaſioned by any food peculiarly repugnant to the ſtomach it often proves fatal.

Debauch of every kind, particularly unſeaſonable ſitting up, is moſt frequently productive of ſome of the moſt dreadful diſorders, and exceſſive paſſions of the mind ſometimes produce the ſame effects.

Exceſs in venery is generally productive of the moſt violent and obſtinate diſorders, principally inflammatory fevers, and obſtinate fluxes.

There is a diſeaſe which the French call *La Tytanoſe*, which affects people in the weſtern parts of Florida, and will attack them with prodigious violence upon being wounded even in the ſlighteſt manner: if during the hot months a ſplinter be run into the fleſh, the patients are attacked with violent contorſive ſpaſms, and generally die in about eighteen or twenty hours.

I never ſaw any perſon afflicted with this dreadful diſorder, but from the ſimilarity of the name with the latin *Tetanus*, and from my being told, that opium and camphire are much uſed to procure relief, I take it to be the locked jaw, with which I ſaw a young man die at Mobile, Mr. Lind* recommends copious external applications of opium, and the cold bath; and gives ſome imperfect account of mercurial ointment having lately proved an efficacious remedy; the hint was perhaps neceſſary to be inſerted here.

Angina

---

* Hot Climates, ſecond edition, page 285—286.

Angina Suffocativa, or the putrid ſore-throat, ſometimes appears here, this is a contagious diſtemper, and rages in America moſtly among the youth; it generally begins with a ſlow fever attended with great laſſitude and a low pulſe; this is ſucceeded by a ſore throat with white ſpots near the *uvula*, and if it be not immediately taken notice of, the patient ſoon becomes paſt hopes, and generally dies within 24 hours after the firſt ſevere attack of the fever; the phyſicians in Carolina and Georgia preſcribe firſt mercurial purges, and order a gargle of borax, dragon's blood and Armenian bole in vinegar and honey; and the throat is anointed frequently by help of a feather, with a mixture of balſam of ſulphur, tincture of myrh, honey, loaf ſugar, and yolk of eggs; the principal part of the cure is to attend the diſeaſe early, the leaſt neglect being dangerous.

The dry belly-ach is a very painful and tormenting diſorder, though rarely fatal; it is occaſioned by cold damp lodgings, and being expoſed to the night air; but moſt frequently in all climates by an exceſſive uſe of the vegetable acid juices, which are all extremely aſtringent in their nature: and when this diſorder proceeds from too liberal an uſe of punch, rheumatic pains and paralytic affections of the nerves are its conſtant conſequences and attendants, with loſs of the proper uſe of limbs: (often for life) the moſt uſual ſymptoms are the vomiting of bile, with the moſt obſtinate coſtive habit imaginable; and when ſtools are procured, the excrements are exceſſive hard, and in round balls like horſe dung: all this is attended with the moſt excruciating pain in the bowels, and a clammy ſweat:

the

the method of cure is by adminiſtering emetics of the antimonial kind, which often alſo procure a ſtool; this is the only thing that can relieve the poor ſufferers; the warm ſteam of hot herb baths, clyſters of the *tinct. Thebaic.* in luke warm milk, and emollient plaiſters in which opium enters, applied to the ſtomach and belly; bitter purging ſalts and manna, and infuſions of ſena leaves, after the middle vein is ſtript out of them; in the ſevere attacks of the pain, opiates are uſed, and too often that curſed *arcanam* of the vulgar among the Engliſh; I mean rum and other diſtilled ſpirits, which in this diſorder too often prove fatal poiſons; the oil of *Palmæ Chriſti*, by three or four ſpoonfuls has ſometimes proved effectual; oil of almonds and of olives, have been given with ſucceſs; after all medicines had failed, i once applied to a mulato woman, who was a noted empyric in the iſland of Curacoa, where i was attacked by this diſtemper: ſhe ordered a clyſter of ſweet milk, tobacco and brown ſugar, which gave ſome ſlight relief, but after a while the painful ſymptoms of the diſeaſe ſeemed to be as excruciating as ever; ſhe then gathered ſome handfuls of the leaves of a ſhrub which is there called *Wild Carpat*;* theſe ſhe boiled like ſpinnage, and made them into ſeven or eight balls of the ſize of walnuts, put them in a plate, and poured oil olive on them, and a little pepper; this kind of ſalad ſhe made me eat with a piece of bread, when i obſerved to her, that ſhe

* *Carpat*, is the Dutch name of *Palma Chriſti*; I have long in vain tried to find the ſhrub, from which theſe leaves were taken; all i know of them is, they are *Lanceolate*, of a lucid green, and boil very tender.

ſhe ought to have added vinegar to have made a perfect ſallad; ſhe anſwered, that vinegar in my caſe was poiſon; in half an hour after the uſe of this meſs, a ſtool (the firſt in twenty-three days) was procured, which was followed by five or ſix more that very afternoon; and ſhe then gave me for ſome days an intenſely bitter mixture, in which i perceived the juice of aloes predominant, but could not learn the compoſition. This kept me in a lax habit of body, and in about fourteen days i was enabled to purſue my ordinary avocations; camphire and opium enter into all the purgative preſcriptions i have ſeen ordered in this diſeaſe, by the phyſicians of the ſouth.

There is an inſtantaneous fatal diſorder which the French call *un coup de Soleil*, i. e. literally, a ſtroke of the ſun; of this i remember one inſtance during my ſtay in Weſt-Florida, when it killed a child of about twelve years old on the ſpot between the hours of eleven and twelve in the forenoon, the time, as i am informed, in which it always takes place; by inſtantly applying cold water to the crown of the head, i am told, its fatality is prevented; likewiſe by cupping the crown of the head: what its ſymptoms are, i have not ſeen, but by the deſcriptions, i take it to be a fever, which ſo violently attacks the patient, that it cauſes inſtant death. This diſorder occurs very ſeldom, and as it is ſo very eaſily guarded againſt, perſons who are attacked by it, are in a great meaſure blameable for their own misfortune, particularly if they know the country; the French, one and all, put a ſingle piece of clean writing paper between their hat and head during the hot months, to ward off the attacks of the *coup de Soleil.* Theſe

Theſe are the diſeaſes, which occur during the hot ſeaſons; there is likewiſe a fever, in which the patient is continually affected with defluxions of the head: this appears in the late winter months, and during a wet ſpring; it is called a Catarrhal Fever: this diſeaſe is not frequent, but when it appears, it is generally treated like other fevers, except that bleeding is more freely uſed.

The pleuriſy alſo makes its appearance ſometimes in winter. Moderate or copious bleedings from the arm according to the degrees of violence of its attacks are immediately uſed: if looſeneſs and gripes attend the pain, blood is taken away often, and in ſmall quantities; the patient is kept moderately warm, and on no account ſuffered to uncover; the firſt medecine is commonly a cooling purge; gentle ſudorifics are likewiſe adminiſtered; frequent hot baths for the feet are alſo preſcribed, but very cautiouſly applied for fear of his catching cold. After the operation of purges and ſudorifics, gentle antimonials are uſed, and a light eaſy digeſted diet, with infuſions of hyſſop, ſage, or baum, follow in courſe; likewiſe ſwallowing of living wood-lice: and in caſe of coſtive ſymptoms, clyſters are uſed; on a continuance of the pain in the ſide, a moderate bliſter or drawing plaiſter is put to the part; —much coughing, which cauſes a watchfulneſs, is removed by opiates: in feveriſh ſymptoms the diſeaſe is treated as the other fevers; ſpirituous liquors are to be avoided by all means.

During ſome winters, a *Peripneumony* alſo viſits a few people here; the method of cure is the ſame as for the pleuriſy: it is ſaid to be more dangerous than the pleuriſy, particularly if co-

pious

pious bleeding is not made uſe of as ſoon as the patient is affected. In this diſorder there is generally a freer acceſs of air allowed than in the laſt, and the patient kept almoſt in a ſitting poſture; it is ſaid that the ſteams of warm water drawn into the lungs in this diſeaſe, is a powerful help.

A compound of the two laſt diſorders, called the *Pleuro-peripneumony*, is likewiſe ſometimes heard of, and is treated as the laſt.

In Georgia i ſaw one or two inſtances of a diſorder among blacks, to which the people give the odd name of the pleuriſy of the temple, of the forehead, of the eye, and ſo on; i am told they have a pleuriſy for every part of the head. It is violently acute, and, as i am informed, proves ſometimes fatal in ten or twelve hours time; if immediately on its attack, a quantity of blood is not drawn from the arm, for the reſt this diſeaſe is treated like a pleuriſy.

The chronic diſeaſes are dropſies, conſumptions, hemorrhoidal and habitual fluxes, relaxed and bilious habits of body, ruptures, worm-fevers, and among blacks the leproſy, elephantiaſis and body yaws; which laſt in Carolina is called the lame diſtemper; the firſt five of theſe are often beſt removed by a change of air, as the moſt efficacious medicines often prove of no uſe againſt the obſtinacy of the diſorders in the climate where they firſt originated.

The dropſy moſt frequently ſeizes a patient after an obſtinate intermitting fever, where the uſe of the bark has been too long delayed: in this diſorder the ordinary preſcriptions in theſe countries is ſyrup of ſquills, and the common diuretic

diuretic ſalt; with theſe the patient is confined to dry food, and from ſpirituous liqurs; ſuch vegetables as turnips, radiſhes, &c. he is allowed to indulge in: Dr. Lind ſays, that exciting a ſlight ſalivation, may be of help in a tolerable ſound conſtitution, perhaps none of the chronic diſeaſes are more relieved by change of climate than an obſtinate dropſy. A conſumptive habit of body. particularly where the cough is very obſtinate and frequent, and when bilious ſtools, with a great hardneſs of the lower belly affect the patient, or when a continual fever emaciates the poor ſufferer, he is in a dangerous way, and a remove to colder climates is hardly adviſeable; i have known ſuch people relieved by making frequent ſhort voyages to ſea in moderate climates; but unleſs proper remedies are alſo made uſe of during theſe voyages, the fever returns almoſt directly on relanding; frequently after one or two of theſe voyages the patient feels himſelf better; if he then retires to a milk diet, and freely indulges himſelf in fruits, utterly avoiding all manner of drugs or medicines, he may find relief, and even a return of conſtitution; frequent doſes of flour of brimſtone, and cooling the water he drinks with ſal nitre, are of uſe during this courſe: likewiſe the patient ought with the greateſt care to avoid exerciſe; the ſtiller he keeps himſelf the more hopes of recovery there is. The fever which attends this diſorder is of ſuch a nature, that here the uſe of the bark muſt be carefully ſhunned, as it has been during long practice, and by frequent experiments of very able phyſicians, found to be a ſure poiſon in this diſorder. The Spaniards wear the neſt of

the

the great travelling ſpider ſowed in a rag about their necks as a ſure way to aſſuage a hectick fever, and i think with great ſucceſs: it is a matter of ſurprize to ſee how perhaps a thouſand *animalculæ* which are in perfect life in one of theſe neſts, at the time of its being put round the patient's neck, will in the courſe of about thirty hours be perfectly pulverized by meer dint of the heat of the body, which theſe young Spiders ſeem in a peculiar manner to attract. In hardneſs of the belly in this diſorder moſt of the Creoles uſe hard and frequent rubbing it with a warm hand dipt in oil or hogs-lard, *Quære* bears oil being ſo very ſubtil and penetrating, would it not be preferable in rubbing?

The *hæmorrhoidal* flux is very frequent here, and was it not ſo very troubleſome an attendant, it would be looked upon as a beneficial event. Perſons who are attacked by it are generally certain of not falling into the more dangerous diſeaſes occaſioned by obſtructions of the *Viſcera* in hot climates; the greateſt danger attending it is that of the patient's falling into an habitual flux, which is a moſt tedious and troubleſome diſeaſe, and that although the patient has no other complaint but the frequent neceſſity of going to ſtool and is but ſeldom troubled with an involuntary expulſion of the *fæces*; this diſeaſe is almoſt always a ſlow though ſure harbinger of death by its continuance for years, draining to the very laſt drop of moiſture from the ſufferer, who being left a meer ſkeleton, is as it were carried off in the manner of an expiring candle-ſnuff; yet thoſe perſons, who have been opened after death have been found with all the inward parts perfectly

ſound, and thus the faculty is left in the dark without any way to account for this diſorder; i have heard of people of a very robuſt conſtitution with whom it has continued above twenty years; no diſeaſe is ſo frequent; it almoſt always attacks people who have ſuffered much from frequent ſickneſs or ſevere fatigue; and its obſtinacy is ſuch, that it will yield to no remedy whatever in the climate where it originated; i have myſelf been attacked by it firſt in the province of Georgia, in conſequence of the great fatigue i underwent in my frequent long and wearisome journies by land; no aſtringent of any kind, not even the long uſe of rhubarb and *ipecacuanha* was of any the leaſt ſervice to me; vain was every medicine againſt this obſtinate malady; opium was recommended to me as a ſpecific; this i took at length in incredible doſes but the relief was only momentary; after the ſhort reprieve obtained hereby it returned with tenfold violence and obſtinacy: if then i was unhappy enough to uſe opium during this attack it was of no uſe whatever, but obliged me for the next time to ſeek reſpite from a double doſe, the cold bath i found of ſome ſlight benefit and when i was at the proper ſeaſon in any part of Florida, where the coco-plumb * grew in abundance, by freely eating this wholeſome fruit i was relieved for that ſeaſon, and no ſooner was i obliged to abandon this excellent remedy, but the diſeaſe again prevailed. Thus was i harraſſed for about eight years when i changed climates by coming to New-York; here likewiſe all medical preſcriptions failed,

* *Chryſo Calanus.*

failed, till at length i found that a decoction of the bark of *Semi-Ruba* and *Terra japonica* in the proportion of half an ounce of each to six pounds of water being boiled down to one sixth, was an effectual medicine after the change of climate, which last alone must not be relied on: one quart of the above decoction in the quantity of a wine-glass ful taken morning and evening cured me; but relapsing again after about three months i got another quart, with the two first glasses of which i took a small pill of crude opium, and by two more glasses full i found myself again restored to my natural habit of body.

An entire relaxation of the solids, and a bilious habit of body is another common affliction of those, who have suffered much by the diseases of hot climates; the constitution is in such people so decayed, that it seems as if every moment would be that of dissolution: the stomach is weak, their complexion is nearly that of a sufferer by the jaundice, and hardly any food especially greens and salads are found digestible; if the dry belly-ach has been their frequent attendant a paralytic contraction of the limbs is the final consequence of that malady: others again will frequently vomit clear bile and be very costive having the *abdomen* exceeding hard; for all these complaints there is no better cure than a change of climate, and when the patient begins to feel any benefit from the difference of air while at sea, i would recommend a plentiful and constant use of chamœmile flowers, chewing them in the same manner as people do tobacco; this, however disagreeable to most palates at first, becomes in time as agreeable to the mouth as it is grateful to the stomach.

The uſe of *Elixir Vitrioli* in the quantity of fifteen or twenty drops taken every morning faſting and again an hour before dinner; and the moderate uſe of a glaſs of generous wine is not amiſs to ſuch ſufferers: animal food, eſpecially mutton, is the moſt ſuitable diet, and in caſe of an obſtinate coſtiveneſs uſe the *Elixir Aloes* often at night or in the morning; the cold bath, eſpecially of ſalt water, is very beneficial to ſuch ſufferers.

Ruptures are pretty much complained of on the banks of Miſſiſſippi; i have obſerved likewiſe that they are a good deal frequent in Georgia and in Carolina: what can be the cauſe of a diſorder of this kind being frequent i know not, but i find in a pamphlet which gives a ſuperficial deſcription of South-Carolina the following way to account for it, "the obſtructed *viſcera* being "ſwelled beyond their natural ſize, the inteſtines "are too much confined, and by nature of the "aliment and bad digeſtion being frequently diſ- "tended with wind, it is not to be wondered at, "that they often paſs through the rings of the "abdominal muſcles."

The Worm fever which is common through all America, eſpecially from Pennſylvania ſouthwards, is not ſo common here as in Carolina, Georgia, &c. the reaſon i take to be becauſe the ſweet potatoe is not ſo univerſally uſed for food here as elſewhere; children ſuffer moſt with it, though it ſometimes affects people of all ages. When a fever obſtinately withſtands all medicines it may almoſt be depended upon, that this obſtinacy proceeds from worms; the ſtincking weed which is known by the name of Jeruſalem Oak, and in thoſe provinces is the moſt efficacious ver-

mifuge,

mifuge, and the ſafeſt medicine eſpecially for children; a ſpoon full of the expreſſed juice of the whole plant taken on an empty ſtomach is found to be a ſovereign antidote; the *Lonicera* i have already mentioned as to its qualities; if the worms are ſuſpected to be lodged in the *rectum*, clyſters of a decoction of tanſey, onions, garlick, rue, worm-wood, and ſuch-like in milk are of good effect; a plaiſter of pulverized *Aloes*, oil of rue, or worm-wood, with powder of the bitter gourd and ox-gall applied to the navel is alſo of good effect: i would recommend the uſe of animal food, particularly rich fiſh-ſoups highly ſeaſoned with garlick or onions, and it will be proper to avoid all kinds of farinaceous vegetables except wheaten bread: above all the potatoe and pumpkin ought to be ſhunned as poiſon.

A loathſome diſeaſe appears ſome times among the Negroes after ſevere acute diſorders, eſpecially if the patient has been obliged to keep his bed long, likewiſe after a violent exerciſe has brought on a ſurfeit: this is called the *Elephantiaſis* from the ſwelling of the feet and legs; it is moſt frequently ſeen to affect one leg only; in the firſt ſtages of this diſorder the patient becomes wretched through exceſſive laſſitudes which bring on an emaciation of the body, then the corrupted juices ſubſide into the leg or legs and feet, theſe ſwell, the ſkin becoming diſtended, ſhines and ſhews the diſtended veins every where below the knee; now the ſkin by degrees loſes its gloſs and becomes unequal and ſomething ſcaly; after this chaps make their appearance, the glands are ſtretched and the ſcales are daily enlarged, appearing as hard and callous as the hide of an Alligator, not-

withſtanding which the ſlighteſt prick of a pointed inſtrument will cauſe the blood to exude; this diſeaſe affects neither the appetite nor the digeſtive powers of the body, on the contrary the patient in this and chearfulneſs of ſpirits reſembles the healthieſt of men, and the inconvenience of his heavy leg only prevents his ability for the more laborious part of his duty.

No manner of cure has yet been found for this cruel diſorder, but the patients often live to a very advanced age under the preſſure of its yoke, even when it has been contracted in early youth; it is ſaid that the amputation of the affected limbs is no cure, for the diſeaſe will immediately attack the ſound leg; this i find alſo aſſerted by *Hughes* in his Natural Hiſtory of Barbados.

I have ſeen three or four inſtances of the diſeaſe called body yaws (in the Iſlands) and in Carolina the lame diſtemper, this is ſaid to proceed from hereditary venereal taints; it appears in cancerous corroding ſores in the mouth and throat, and ſpreading ulcers together with fleſhy protuberances chiefly on the face, breaſt and thighs, with a ſwelling of the ſkin and knee-bones, and commonly corrodes the Cartilages of the noſe, its firſt ſymptoms ſhewing themſelves about the throat and palate, have cauſed ignorant people to miſtake it for the *Angina Suffocativa* before deſcribed: Mercurial medicines are uſed againſt it, afterwards diet-drinks of China root, nut-graſs, &c. the ſores in the mouth are often to be rubbed with a feather dipt in ſyrup of roſes to an ounce of which two drops of *Sp. Vitr.* have been added: unctuous, ſalt, ſpiced meats and ſpirituous liquors are abſolutely to be avoided; frequent ſweats are

alſo

alſo preſcribed and a great care againſt catching cold.

The Leproſy ſo called, whether the ſame as was the cauſe of proſcription to the unhappy patients under the Moſaic laws i ſhall not pretend to determine; certain it is, that it is a nauſeous, loathſome and infectious diſeaſe ſome times ſeen among the blacks; this appears firſt with the loſs of beard and hair from the eye-brows, ſwelling of the lobes of the ears, the face begins to ſhine and brown protuberances appear thereon, the lips and noſe ſwell to a monſtrous ſize, the fingers and toes will in the end drop off, and the body becomes at laſt ſo ulcerated as to make the poor incurable patient really a miſerable object of pity.

Having thus largely deſcribed the climate, ſoil, water, general productions of the earth, the inhabitants with their cuſtoms, manners and the diſeaſes incident to the human race here, i ſhall next proceed to give a topographical deſcription of the country, the general face particularly, and with this ſubject end my firſt volume.

The river St. Mary is the northernmoſt boundary of Eaſt Florida and by the Spaniards called Rio *Santa Cecilia*, and by the ſavages *Thlathla Tlakuphka*, and is deſcribed in page 36; the ſoil here is not very fertile, unleſs it be at its very head, which reaches up to near the head of flint river, which laſt runs into the river *Apalachicola*, and this being the weſtern bounds of this province, we may in the preſent undetermined ſtate of theſe matters regard as the moſt natural limits of the province on the land ſide; from St. Mary's river's mouth there is a diſtance of fourteen miles along the beach of *Amelia* iſland to the mouth of Naſſau river;

river; this iſland is in general ſandy and hilly, but has ſome fertile ſpots on it capable of fine improvements, it is about two miles through in its broadeſt parts, which is the north end, and tapers away till it's ſouth end is ſcarce half a mile acroſs; here near the ſouth end was formerly a convent of Nuns and a church dedicated to St. Mary, whoſe name the iſland bore in the time of the Spaniards, but there were ſcarce any traces left of the buildings in 1770; weſt of its north end lay the Tyger iſlands, between which and *Amelia*, there is a tolerable broad paſſage forming a convenient harbour, theſe iſlands conſiſt chiefly of marſh and pine hammocks; this paſſage continues through *Amelia* narrows into Naſſau river, and is frequented by ſuch crafts as exceed not four feet draught of water. The land on Naſſau river is almoſt all very fertile; the river originates not above thirty miles from the ſea, where it begins in many ſmall rivulets, which all joining very ſoon, by their confluence form a conſiderable large ſtream navigable for veſſels of ten feet draught up to its forks, this river formerly called Rio *Sta. Maria*, in my opinion has along its banks the beſt body of land in Eaſt Florida near the ſea, and I believe that this will form in time a pretty opulent diſtrict; between this river and St. John's river the land is miſerably barren, as it is likewiſe between Naſſau and St. Mary, though not in ſo wretched a degree; we find between the mouths of Naſſau and St. John's river three iſlands, great and little Talbot, and fort George, together in length about five or ſix miles; the Talbot's iſlands lay next to the ſouth of *Amelia*, and the greateſt innermoſt: this laſt is counted fertile, the other is inconſiderable;

conſiderable; they are hilly as well as fort George; the laſt has received its name from an intrenchment thrown up on it by general Oglethorp during his fruitleſs expedition againſt St. Auguſtine.

We are now at the mouth of the river St. John, already in part deſcribed in page 34 and 35; this river called by the indians *Ylacco*, and by the Spaniards Rio *St. Matheo o Picolato*, runs from its mouth ſomething above twenty-four miles up nearly eaſt and weſt; at this diſtance up the ferry is kept: (commonly called the cow-ford from the multitude of cattle drove through here at the beginning of the ſettlement by the Engliſh:) juſt above this ferry the river takes a bend and the direction of its courſe becomes parallel to the ocean; the general run of its water being from ſouth to north riſing at or near the latitude 27: and this ferry laying nearly in 30: 10; near the latitude 28: it approaches the ſea within a mile, in ſo much, that ſome marſh and broken pine-land only ſeparates them: thus it makes a peninſula from hence to the above latitude 30: 10. which peninſula is for the moſt part between twenty-five and twenty miles in breadth. This part of the country is the chief ſeat of the preſent improvements, and is for the moſt part too barren for planting; but excellent for the keeping of cattle and horſes, as the land chiefly conſiſts of pine-land and ſavannahs of the kind deſcribed in page 22; the ſwamps along the river (although their appearance from the river deceived the firſt adventurers,) are for the moſt part no more than an edging along its banks, hardly any where extending a quarter of a mile deep; the journal of Mr. *Bartram* as publiſhed by Dr. *Stork*, may give a

tolerable idea of the banks of this river, and consequently of the weſt part of this peninſula; but this journal, though a very looſe performance, and principally defective where we might expect it moſt compleat, viz. in the botanical articles, yet ſuch as it is, the Doctor who wanted to extol this province even beyond reaſon, has not thought fit to give it us in its native dreſs, but mutilated and unfairly modelled it to anſwer his own purpoſe, which has given another author * a handle for depreciating this country ſtill more below its value than the Doctor has endeavoured to raiſe it above; however all ſuch prejudiced writers being below contempt, let us leave them what they are, and after obſerving once more that the fruitful ſpots are few when compared with the unfruitful in this tract, proceed to give an account of the eaſtern edge of this peninſula viz. the ſea coaſt from the mouth of St. John to the mouth of the river *Ais* or *Aiſahatcha*: not far from the entrance of St. John's is *St. Pablo* or St. Paul's creek or river; on it are ſome fruitful ſpots about twelve miles ſouth of the great river; *Sablo* river approaches the head of St. Mark's or the North river, at whoſe head are the plains of *Diego* very proper for the breeding of cattle. This river St. Mark falls into the harbour of Auguſtine about two miles to the northward of the fort, and but a little way within the bar: to which bar from the general's mount at the entrance of St. John's is a meaſured diſtance of 36 miles. Between the north river and the ſea is a very narrow ſlip of ſand-hills and other almoſt uſeleſs ground; the bar of this harbour

* Preſent State of Great Britain and North America.

harbour is a perpetual obſtruction to St. Auguſtine's becoming a place of any great trade, and alone is ſecurity enough againſt enemies; ſo that i ſee but little occaſion for ſo much fortification as the Spaniards had here, eſpecially as a little look out called *Moſſa* at a ſmall diſtance north of the town, proved ſufficient to repel general Oglethorpe with the moſt formidable armament ever intended againſt Auguſtine; however there was much more propriety in the Spaniards having a fort in the modern taſte of military architecture of a regular quadrangular form, with four baſtions, a wide ditch, a cover'd way, a glacis, a ravelin to defend the gate, places of arms and bomb-proofs with a caſemating all round &c. &c. for a defence againſt the ſavages, than there was in raiſing ſuch ſtupendous piles of building as the new barracks by the Engliſh, which are large enough to contain five regiments, when it is a matter of great doubt whether there will ever be a neceſſity to keep one whole regiment here; to mend this matter the great barrack was built with materials brought to Auguſtine from New York, far inferior in value to thoſe found on the ſpot; yet the freight alone amounted to more than their value when landed; ſo that people can hardly help thinking that the contrivers of all this having a ſum of money to throw away, found a neceſſity to fill ſome paraſite pockets, and judged the beſt method for doing this was to make contractors of the folks in view, as fifty men beſides the inhabitants would defend this fort againſt the united bands of all the ſavages here; as a conſtant ſupply of proviſions can come by water, and no formidable foreign force can ever be reaſonably expected

to come here, it makes us almoſt believe that all this ſhew is in vain, or at moſt, that the Engliſh were ſo much in dread of muſketos, that they thought a large army requiſite to drive off theſe formidable foes. To be ſerious, this fort and barracks add not a little to the beauty of the proſpect, but moſt good men will think with me that the money ſpent on this uſeleſs parade would have been better laid out on roads and ferries through the province, or if it muſt be in forts, why not at Penſacola? where there is a neceſſity to have a powerful force, and where the bar will admit a ſixty gun-ſhip: but i had almoſt forgot that the acts of Aſſembly there would have defeated the ſanguine expectations of Meſſrs. contractors.

The town has by all writers till Dr. Stork's time been ſaid to lay at the foot of a hill; ſo far from truth is this, that it is almoſt ſurrounded by water, and the remains of the line drawn from the harbour to St. Sebaſtian's creek, a quarter of a mile to the north of the fort, in which line ſtands a fortified gate called the barrier gate, is the only riſing ground near it; this line had a ditch, and its fortification was pretty regular; about a mile and a half beyond this are the remains of another fortified line, which had a kind of look out or advanced guard of ſtoccadoes at its weſtern extremity on St. Sebaſtian's creek; and fort Moſſa at its eaſt end; beſides theſe the town has been fortified with a ſlight but regular line of circumvallation and a ditch The town is half a mile in length and its ſouthern line had two baſtions of ſtone, one of which (if not both) are broken down, and the materials uſed for the building

building of the foundation of the barracks; the ditch and parapet are planted with a ſpecies of agave, which by its points is well fitted to keep cattle out, and with that intention was uſed by the Spaniards for fences. Dr. Stork has raiſed this fence into a fortification againſt the ſavages and magnified it into *Chevaux de frize*. The town is very ill built, the ſtreets being all except one crooked and narrow. The date on one of the houſes i remember to be 1571; theſe are of ſtone, moſtly flat roofed, heavy and look badly. Till the arrival of the Engliſh neither glaſs windows nor chimneys were known here, the lower windows had all a projecting frame of wooden rails before them. On the 3d of January 1766, a froſt deſtroyed all the tropical productions in the country except the oranges; the Spaniards called this a judgement on the place, for being become the property of Hereticks, as they never had experienced the like. The Governor's houſe is a heavy unſightly pile, but well contrived for the climate; at its north weſt ſide it has a kind of tower to the height of which Governor Grant has added ſeveral feet; this ſerves as a look out. There were three ſuburbs in the time of the Spaniards, but all deſtroyed before my acquaintance with the place, except the church of the indian town to the north now converted into an hoſpital; (Dr. Stork ſays the ſteeple of this church is of good workmanſhip though built by the indians, neither of which aſſertions is true,) and the ſteeple of the German chapel to the weſt of the town likewiſe remains. The pariſh church in the town is a wretched building and now almoſt a heap of ruins; the parade before the Governor's houſe is nearly

in

in the middle of the town and has a very fine effect; there are two rows of orange trees planted by order of Governor Grant, which make a fine walk on each ſide of it: the ſandy ſtreets are hardened by lime and oyſter-ſhells; Dr. Stork ſays there were nine hundred houſes at the time of the Spaniſh evacuation, and three thouſand two hundred inhabitants; in my time there were not three hundred houſes and at moſt a thouſand inhabitants; theſe, a few excepted, i found to be a kind of outcaſt and ſcum of the earth; to keep them ſuch, their ill form of government does not a little contribute. A letter from a friend, who lately returned from England, directed to me, dated 2?th May 1774, ſays, "this town is now "truly become a heap of ruins, a fit receptacle "for the wretches of inhabitants."

About eight miles north of the town is a tract of a conſiderable ſize, called the twelve mile ſwamp; which i take to be equal in goodneſs to any in America; this began to be cultivated in the year 1770. Three miles weſt from the town is another ſmall tract of tolerable land, called the three mile ſwamp; all beſides this within many miles is really a miſerable ſand, a dreary ſcrub ground, and boggy ſalt marſh, a few acres at the head of St. Sebaſtian's only excepted.

The iſland *St. Anaſtatio* is ſituate oppoſite the town and forms the harbour, its north end being oppoſite to the ſouth end of the narrow peninſula made by the north river: this is the only part of all the lands purchaſed by the worthy Mr. Fiſh, for the debts due to him by the Spaniards, which he was allowed to keep, notwithſtanding the treaty allowed it him; for no ſale was judged valid if

made

made by him, unleſs the government afterwards gave a grant, but this was one of the many ways to make offices worthy of holding; the above named gentleman has a pretty retreat on this iſland, about four miles from town; but as the land is barren it is more pleaſant than profitable. The ſound which divides this iſland from the main, is called *Matauca* river, it is about twenty miles in length; the iſland affords paſturage for numerous herds of horſes and ſome cattle, the firſt in particular breed kindly here; about half a mile from the north end of the iſland is a heavy ſtone building ſerving for a look out; a ſmall detachment of troops is kept here, and by ſignals from hence, the inhabitants are given to underſtand what kind of, and how many veſſels are approaching the harbour, either from the north or from the ſouth; in the year 1770 fifty feet of timber frame work was added to its former height, as was likewiſe a maſt or flagſtaff forty ſeven feet long, but this laſt proving too weighty, endangered the building and was ſoon taken down. In this iſland are quarries of a kind of concreted petrified ſhells, or a ſtone bearing their reſemblance, this will be deſcribed hereafter.

About two miles ſouth of the town is the mouth of St. Sebaſtian's river already mentioned, this is a ſmall creek riſing near ſix miles north of the town, but its ſtream ſoon becomes ſalt by the meeting of the waters from below; veſſels go two miles and a half up it to clean. A bridge was built over it to the weſt of the town, which ſhortened the road into the country near ſeven miles, but the great depth of the water joined to the inſtability of the bottom did not ſuffer it to remain

long

long, and a ferry is now eſtabliſhed in its room; the keeper of the ferry has £50 ſterl. *per annum* allowed him, and the inhabitants pay nothing for croſſing except after dark.

We next meet the mouth of St. Nicholas creek, on the point to the north of which the firſt town was built by the Spaniards, but they ſoon removed it for conveniency's ſake to its preſent ſite: on the ſouth point is a plantation belonging to Mr. *Moultrie* the preſent Lieutenant Governor; this place is remarkable for a large oyſter bank being entirely eat out by this gentleman's negroes in a ſcarce ſeaſon. This river is ſhort originating about ten miles to the weſt of the ſound, and has no fertile land on or near it.

Six miles further ſouth, or about ten miles from town is the mouth of *Sta. Cecilia*, another ſmall river of little note. Between nine and ten miles further is the look out or fort of *Matanca*, on a marſhy iſland, commanding the entrance of *Matanca*, which lays oppoſite to it; this fort is to be ſeen at the diſtance of about five leagues, it is of very little ſtrength, nor need it be otherwiſe, as there is ſcarce eight feet water at the beſt of times on this bar: the Spaniards kept a Lieutenant's command here; the Engliſh a Serjeant's. Between two or three miles from this inlet or bar is another of ſtill leſs note, called *el Penon*; oppoſite and ſouthward is the mouth of a river called *North Weſt*, i ſuppoſe from the direction of the courſe we go up it; it is ſomewhat more conſiderable than the two or three laſt mentioned; ſome ſettlements are near its banks, but of ſmall importance, the land being in general arid and poor. Three miles further ſouth is the upper end of the water,

water which by former Geographers has been ſtiled a river; the Spaniards called it *Rio Muſketo*, and the Engliſh the Muſketo river: *Mr. de Brahm* has changed the name of it into *Halifax* river. This pretended river is one of thoſe arms of the ſea commonly called a *Lagoon*; thus i believe the wonder of Dr. Stork's two rivers, lying parrallel to each other and the ocean, and yet running directly oppoſite courſes is well accounted for, ſuch *Lagoons* being not at all uncommon: the upper part of this piece of water is a kind of lake or pond, and is removed at ſo inconſiderable a diſtance from the ſea, that boats which were obliged to go outſide at *Penon*, where the inland navigation ceaſes, are here drawn out of the ſea into this *lagoon*. I believe the firſt rocks to be ſeen on the beach of the coaſt of America, from Long-Iſland to this place are to be ſeen here; they are of that kind which ſeems to be a concretion of ſhells; they are ſmall and do not extend far into the water, but are as it were buried in the ſand at low water mark.

About twenty miles ſouth is the mouth of *Tomoco* creek, falling into this *lagoon* from the weſtward; the head of this is at a ſmall diſtance from St. John's river; it is ſaid that ſome good land lays along its banks.

Thirty two miles further ſouth is the mouth of another river called *ſpruce creek*; it is very rich in freſh marſh, the ground being greatly broken at its mouth; this is a more conſiderable ſtream than the laſt, and at a little diſtance from this mouth are the firſt ſettlements of *Muſketo* or *New Smyrna*, particularly *Mr. Penman*'s.

Between three and four miles further ſouth is

the entrance, or bar of *New Smyrna* of ſtill leſs navigable convenience than St. Auguſtine, and is the outwatering of the above named *lagoon* as likewiſe of another coming from the ſouth ſtiled *North Hillſborough river*; here we begin to ſee a few of the tropical plants, ſuch as *tarica*, *boraſſus*, *capſicum*, *mangles* and *blackwood*. At a few miles from the bar is the ſituation of the town or ſettlement made by Dr. Turnbull for Sir William Duncan, himſelf, and perhaps more aſſociates; this town is called *New Smyrna*, from the place of the Doctor's lady's nativity. The ſettlements round this famous town extend conſiderably along the banks of this *lagoon*, and large quantities of very good indigo have been made here. If my reader is inquiſitive to know why i call this *famous*, i anſwer on account of the cruel methods uſed in ſettling it, which made it the daily topic of converſation for a long time in this and the neighbouring provinces.

About 1500 people, men, women and children were deluded away from their native country, where they lived at home in the plentiful corn-fields and vineyards of Greece and Italy, to this place, where inſtead of plenty they found want in its laſt degree, inſtead of promiſed fields, a dreary wilderneſs; inſtead of a grateful fertile ſoil, a barren arid ſand; and in addition to their miſery, were obliged to indent themſelves, their wives, and children for many years, to a man who had the moſt ſanguine expectations of tranſplanting *Baſhawſhip* from the Levant. The better to effect his purpoſe, he granted them a pitiful portion of land for ten years, upon the plan of the feodal ſyſtem: this being improved and juſt

rendered

rendered fit for cultivation, at the end of that term it again reverts to the original grantor, and the grantee, may, if he chuſes, begin a new ſtate of vaſſalage for ten years more. Many were denied even ſuch grants as theſe, and were obliged to work in the manner of negroes, a taſk in the field; their proviſions were at the beſt of times only a quart of maize per day, and two ounces of pork per week; this might have ſufficed with the help of fiſh which abounds in this *lagoon*, but they were denied the liberty of fiſhing, and leſt they ſhould not labour enough, inhuman taſk-maſters were ſet over them, and inſtead of allowing each family to do with their homely fare as they pleaſed, they were forced to join all together in one meſs, and at the beat of a vile drum, to come to one common copper, from whence their *bomany* was laded out to them; even this coarſe and ſcanty meal was through careleſs management rendered ſtill more coarſe, and through the knavery of a proveditor, and the pilfering of a hungry cook, ſtill more ſcant. Maſters of veſſels were forewarned from giving any of them a piece of bread or meat. Imagine to yourſelf an African, (an expert hunter) who had been long the favorite of his maſter, through the importunities of this petty tyrant ſold to him,—imagine to yourſelf one of a claſs of men, whoſe hearts are generally callous againſt the ſofter feelings, melted with the wants of ſome of theſe wretches, giving them a piece of his veniſon, of which he caught what he pleaſed, and for this charitable act diſgraced, whipped, and in courſe of time uſed ſo ſeverely that the unuſual ſervitude ſoon releaſed him to a happier ſtate; again, behold a man obliged to whip

his own wife in public, for pilfering bread to relieve her helpleſs family; then think of a time when the above ſmall allowance was reduced to half, and ſee ſome brave generous ſeamen charitably ſharing their own allowance with ſome of theſe wretches, the merciful tars ſuffering abuſe for their generoſity, and the miſerable objects of their ill-timed pity, undergoing bodily puniſhment, for ſatisfying the cravings of a long diſappointed appetite, and you may form ſome judgement of the manner in which New Smyrna was ſettled. Mr. Joſeph Purcell, an excellent young man, who was draughtſman to our department, a Minorquin, who with his family came over at the ſame time with theſe people, but happily withdrew from the yoke, could never ſpeak of this without tears; he had been ſeveral times an eye witneſs to this diſtreſs, and told me, that he knew many among the unhappy ſufferers who were comfortably eſtabliſhed in Europe, but by great promiſes deluded away; and O Florida! were this the only inſtance of ſimilar barbarity which thou haſt ſeen, we might draw a veil over theſe ſcenes of horror; but Rolles Town, Mount Royal, and three or four others of leſs note have ſeen too many wretches fall victims to hunger and ill uſage, and that at a period of life when health and ſtrength generally maintain the human frame in its greateſt vigour, and ſeem to inſure longevity. Rolles-Town in particular has been the ſepulchre of above four hundred ſuch victims. Before I leave this ſubject, I will relate the inſurrection to which thoſe unhappy people at *New Smyrna* were obliged to have recourſe, and which the great ones ſtiled rebellion. In the year 1769, at

a

a time when the unparalleled ſeverities of their taſk-maſters, particularly one *Cutter* (who had been made a juſtice of the peace, with no other view than to enable him to execute his barbarities in a larger extent, and with the greater appearance of authority) had drove theſe wretches to deſpair, they reſolved to eſcape to the *Havannah*; to execute this, they broke into the proviſion ſtores, and ſeized on ſome craft lying in the harbour, but were prevented from taking others by the care of the maſters. Deſtitute of any man fit for the important poſt of a leader, their proceedings were all confuſion, and an Italian of very bad principles, who was accuſed of a rape on a very young girl, but of ſo much note, that he had formerly been admitted to the overſeer's table, aſſumed a kind of command; they thought themſelves ſecure where they were, and this occaſioned a delay, 'till a detachment of the ninth regiment had time to arrive, to whom they ſubmitted, except one boat full, which eſcaped to the Florida Keys; but was taken up by a Providence-man; many were the victims deſtined to puniſhment; as I was one of the grand jury which ſat fifteen days on this buſineſs, I had an opportunity of canvaſſing it well, but the accuſations were of ſo ſmall account that we found only five bills; one of theſe was againſt a man for maiming the above ſaid Cutter, whom, it ſeems, they had pitched upon as the principal object of their reſentment, and curtailed his ear, and two of his fingers;—another for ſhooting a cow, which being a capital crime in England, the law making it ſuch was here extended to this Province; the others were againſt the leader, and three more, for

the

the burglary committed on the provision store; the distresses of the sufferers touched us so, that we almost unanimously wished for some happy circumstances that might justify our rejecting all the bills, except that against the chief, who was a villain. One man was brought before us three or four times, and at last was joined in one accusation with the person who maimed Cutter; yet no evidence of weight appearing against him, I had an opportunity to remark by the appearance of some faces in court, that he had been marked, and that the grand jury disappointed the expectations of more than one great man. Governor Grant pardoned two, and a third who was obliged to be the executioner of the remaining two. On this occasion I saw one of the most moving scenes I ever experienced; long and obstinate was the struggle of this man's mind, who repeatedly called out, that he chose to die rather than be the executioner of his friends in distress: this not a little perplexed Mr. *Woolridge*, the sheriff, till at length the entreaties of the victims themselves, put an end to the conflict in his breast, by encouraging him to the act. Now we beheld a man thus compelled to mount the ladder, take leave of his friends in the most moving manner, kissing them the moment before he committed them to an ignominious death. I have dwelt the longer on this subject, because the native prejudice of vulgar Englishmen, has represented the misfortunes of these wretches in too black a light. It is said that Dr. Stork, who was near the spot when the insurrection happened, died with the fright, and Cutter some time after died a lingering death, having experienced, besides his wounds,

wounds, the terrors of a coward in power, overtaken by vengeance.

To return to our *topographical* account:—along this ſouthern lagoon, which extends itſelf for about forty miles to *Cape Cannaveral*, in the latitude of 28 degrees and a half, we find ſeveral ſettlements of good note, among which that of Captain Rogers is the moſt meridional habitation on the Britiſh continent. At *Cape Cannaveral* is ſome good plantable land, and here is the ſouthern head of this lagoon; about two miles and an half to the weſtward thereof is the head or northern end of another branch, likewiſe called a river; a road is cut to draw boats out of the Muſketo Lagoon into this, which is called *Southhillſborough*, by *De Braham*, but commonly called *Indian River*; the ſavages call it *Aïſa Hatcha*, i. e. Deer River, although the ſame elegant *Lexiphanes* has made it *Hyſweeſlake*; a word by him fabricated, as I ſuppoſe, from *Ylacco*, the name given by the ſavages to St. John's River; the Spaniards call it *Reo d'aïs*. No rivers of any note fall into its northern branch, except St. Sebaſtians, directly oppoſite to whoſe mouth happened the ſhipwreck of the Spaniſh Admiral, who was the northermoſt wreck of fourteen galleons, and a hired Dutch ſhip, all laden with ſpecie and plate; which by ſtreſs of north eaſt winds were drove aſhore and loſt on this coaſt, between this place and the bleach-yard, in 1715. A hired Frenchman, fortunately eſcaped, by having ſteered half a point more eaſt than the others. The people employed in the courſe of our ſurvey, while walking the ſtrand, after ſtrong eaſtern gales, have repeatedly found piſtareens and

double

double piſtareens, which kinds of money probably yet remaining in the wrecks, are ſometimes waſhed up by the ſurf in hard winds. This *Lagoon* ſtretches parallel to the ſea, until the latitude 27 : 20, where it has an out-watering, or mouth: directly before this mouth, in three fathom water, lie the remains of the Dutch wreck. The banks of this lagoon are not fruitful.

Having now exceeded the latitude 28, to the ſouthward, I ſhall here break off from the ſea-coaſt, and reſume the deſcription of the interior country from that latitude; being, as before obſerved, the ſouth-end of the peninſula, made by St. John's River and the ſea. This ſouthern end is a mere point of marſh, with ſome broken pine land in it, not much above three quarters of a mile wide, dividing the freſh water of St. John, from the ſalt of *Aiſa hatcha*: imagine then to yourſelf a country gradually riſing into a ridge of highland, very barren, ſandy and gravelly, a few places excepted, interſected with abundance of rivulets, and variegated with ponds and lakes, whoſe banks being in general lined with oak *Magnolia*, and other trees, exhibit the moſt romantic ſcene imaginable, and you will have a juſt idea of this place. We frequently meet with ſpacious ſavannahs of the high kind; the country is covered with roe deer and turkies, the lakes ſtocked with fiſh, and thus it continues in a due weſt line acroſs the Mexican gulph to the ſaid latitude 28, which ſtrikes ſaid gulph 15 m. northward of the bay of *Spiritu Santo*. As we go northerly the fertile ſpots become more frequent, till we come to that part of the province formerly poſſeſſed by the Spaniards: here we find along the

road

road from *Auguſtine* to *Apalachia*, the remains, or ruins of the following forts and towns, viz. on each ſide of *St. John's*; fort *Picolata*, *Popa*, and about ſeventy miles W. N. W. of *Popa*, we meet with *Alachua*, *Puebla nova Navala*, *Santa Fe*, in a very fertile region, *Utoca*, *St. Pedro*, and *St. Matheo* in a leſs favourable ſoil; then ſome ſmall remains of *Ayovola*; next the fort *St. Mark's* in pine barren, all which are ſtill marked (even in late maps) though not now inhabited; in this part of the country, eſpecially at *Alachua*, an hundred miles N. W. from *Auguſtine*; the ground is fertile in a high degree, and ſo continues northward, to the extent of the province. Near *Santa Fé* is a river of the ſame name, which, by the *Engliſh*, is corruptly called *St. Taffy's*; this river, after a conſiderable courſe, loſes itſelf under ground, and the geography is not ſufficiently known to acquaint us whether it emerges again or not. This i reckon one of the chief curioſities of this province. We next met with very great holes, fifty or ſixty feet deep, and thirty or forty feet in diameter at the ſurface, in the higheſt part of the pine ridges, which afford ſome good water to the thirſty traveller, there being no other water in thoſe ridges. I came acroſs the peninſula in a dry ſeaſon, and we were five days without water, becauſe we travelled over the ridge almoſt in its longitudinal direction, and ſaw but few of theſe holes; (in the ſouthern latitude of 28 and 29, in which i was then) even theſe we found dry; but i did not know, at that time, their nature, which i afterwards found. My guide informed me, that in the road from *Auguſtine* to *Apalachia*, in a ſimilar

ſeaſon, he had been obliged to ſuffer a long thirſt, and at laſt came to one of theſe holes, in which he had always found water, though in others it failed; but this time he found his expectations fruſtrated; preſſed by drought, and animated by his companions, they, with ſome labour, removed a flat ſtone, which lay at the bottom, with an intent to dig for water; but how were they ſurpriſed, when they ſaw a ſmall hole, and about ſix inches below its ſurface ſome very fine water; having ſatisfied the call of nature, their contemplation led them to conſider whence this water ſprung; one of them imagined he ſaw it gently running, their ſtaves were put in to feel for bottom, but none was found: inquſitive curioſity led them to ſound deeper, and lo! a ſapplin, of near thirty feet, found no bottom, and they departed with unſettled conjectures.

On the 10th of June, 1771, i found myſelf in a diſagreeable ſituation, on the weſt courſe of Eaſt-Florida, through want of water; I ſaw frequently very ſtrong currents of diſcoloured water, indicating freſh ſtreams; ſuppoſing theſe to proceed from rivers, i coaſted along ſhore; but found nothing except innumerable iſlands and vaſt ſhoals; frequently taſting the water, found it always brackiſh: at length, on the 21ſt day of ſaid month, i found an opening, where I got anchorage for my veſſel. I went perſonally on ſhore, to explore the ſmall iſland we were next to, taking with me a lad, and a thirty gallon caſk. Its aſpect was miſerable; oyſter ſhells and rocks were every where its ſuperficies; at laſt, however, I found a ſmall hole in the rock, and water in it; which, to my inexpreſſible joy proved freſh,

freſh, and of the cleareſt and fineſt kind; haſtening back on board, we were obliged to roll the caſk in the water, in order to get it into the boat, when, accidentally applying my hand to my mouth, i found to my ſurpriize the water to be freſh; having proceeded on board, we taſted the water in which the veſſel ſwam, which alſo proved freſh and good: thus i found myſelf, as it were, in a ſea of freſh water; ſtimulated by curioſity, i left the veſſel next day, with an intention to penetrate to the main land, which, with difficulty was effected; but in a whole day's ſearch no river was found; yet a conſtant ſtrong current proceeded from the ſhore, and along it. The ſingularity of the circumſtance made me beat the ground, and ſtamp on it, which occaſioned a hollow ſound. I have ſince been informed by travellers, that between the town *St. Mattheo*, (now inhabited by ſavages, and ſituate on the river *St. Juan de Guacaro*) and *Apalachia*, they frequently meet with this hollow ſound under their horſes feet. Twenty miles eaſt from *Apalachia*, we croſs a place over a creek, called by the ſavages, the natural bridge: all theſe circumſtances correſpond with an idea which I have formed of ſubterraneous rivers in this province. Another curioſity, though not a natural one, are the marks of former improvement of this country; particularly the veſtiges of the regular maize hills (even in woods where, ſince the æra of culture, trees of twelve to eighteen inches diameter have grown up) and the nails and ſpikes drove into ſome very large trees, apparently at ancient Spaniſh Cowpens; add to theſe, the reliques of old fences, huts, houſes and churches,

particularly a church bell in the fields, at *Santa Fé.* Thus we have a melancholy inſtance, even in this new world, of the depredations of time, and a country once nobly and extenſively ſettled, through the inroads of the ſavages reduced again to a wilderneſs, yet all this muſt have happened ſome time later than Anno Domini 1543, the year when *Soto* compleated the firſt Chriſtian expedition to Florida, with his death.

Tanta eſt terreſtrium viciſſitudo!

The remaining natural curioſities are the mineral ſprings, deſcribed in page 34 and 35, and the ridge of ſand hills between *Oclawwawhaw*, and *St. John*'s, likewiſe mentioned in page 35 and 36 of this volume. I alſo regard as a curioſity of the artificial kind, the immenſe orange groves, found in the woods between latitude 28½, and 30°, ſuppoſing them originally ſprung from the ſeeds of ſome oranges formerly dropt, by travelling Spaniards, at their camps; but which are now gradually decaying, by reaſon of the wantonneſs of our traders and hunters, who, when in want of the fruit, cut down the tree; other vegetable curioſities will more probably appear under the botanical heads. The many *Tumuli*, originally intended for the peaceful repoſitory of the dead, tho' ſome of their tops now bear ſummer houſes for recreation to the living, are another curioſity. Having mentioned hills, I could wiſh to know whence comes the idea of *Apalachian Mountains*, nothing above a moderate hill appearing in all this vaſt extent of country, till we meet (to the north of latitude 35) with the mountains of the *Upper Cherokees*, on the *Tanaſſee* river; and it is obſervable, that this ridge continuing back of

North-

North-Carolina, Virginia and Maryland, through Pennſylvania, and back of New-Jerſey, into New-York, and terminating near Katſkill, about eight miles from Hudſon's River (where they bear the name of Blue Mountains) lie nearer to the ocean than to the Miſſiſſippi; all the country weſt of them is nearly a plain, there being no falls from *Monongahela* and *Aligheny* forks, down to the mouth of Miſſiſſippi, that are of conſequence enough to interrupt navigation; even the *Ohio* falls, ſo called, are not violently rapid; nor are there any falls from the place of embarkation on the *Tanaſſee*, down the *Hogoheegee*, to the *Ohio*; the *Shawaneſe* river, has none that ever I could learn; *Tombechbe* none in all its extent;—whence then come the deſcriptions of *Apalachian Mountains?* whence *Auguſtine*, at the foot of a hill, and many more ſuch dreams not worth repeating. Either the face of the country is more changed than any we read of elſewhere, or former writers having been abuſed, have again impoſed on us; for the face of Greece and other regions of the Eaſt, is yet reconcileable to *Homer*'s geography. *Holland* ſtill has nearly the ſame kind of ſuperficial appearance, as we are informed, it had eighteen hundred years ago; and we may ſtill trace *Julius Cæſar* through theſe ancient habitations of the *Catti*, *Kelti* and *Cheruſci*; how then comes America ſo altered? Moſt of the deſcribers of this new world, even late ones muſt have impoſed upon us, either originally, or by copying ſuch lying exaggerators and impoſtors, as the inventors of the conqueſt of *Mexico*, and others of his ſtamp; who, not content with giving us plain truth, and ſimple

facts

facts in their native dreſs, have almoſt hid them from us by the thick clouds of fable.

In this northern part of the province we find the following ſettlements of ſavages; about the middle of the land, nearly in latitude 28, in a village called New *Yufala*, being a colony from *Yufala*, in the upper Creek nation, planted in 1767, in a beautiful and fertile plain: about fifty miles N. E. from thence, and about thirty W. S. W. from the upper part of Lake George, in St. John's River, which is eighty miles nearly ſouth of *Auguſtine*, is another town, ſituate on a very beautiful lake, about ſeven miles in length, and from one to one and an half in breadth; this town is acceſſible only on the N. W. ſide of the above lake, over a very narrow and high ridge: when i came to it from the ſouthward, though in a very dry ſeaſon, we had near a mile and a half, or two miles, to wade breaſt high, and ſometimes deeper, through a kind of marſh on the weſt bank. The town lies near the N. W. end of the lake, and from its ſituation is called *Taloffa Ockhaſé*, i. e. the town of the lake; ſome iſlands in this lake, as well as ſome land near the town, are cultivated by the ſavages. Further north is *Alacua*, *Santa Fé*, and *St. Mattheo*, now inhabited by the ſavages; the fort at *Apalache* is now a trading houſe, chiefly in their poſſeſſion, and the weſtern extremity of the province is the great river *Apalachicola*, on which the Lower Creek nation is ſettled, whoſe principal towns are called the *Cowettas*, *Chatahoochas*, *Euchas*, *Citaſees*, *Hogoleeges*, *Oakmulgos*, *Tuſkeegies*, *Cuſſitos*, and *Cherokee Louſitſa*, near the ruins of fort *Apalachicola*, at the junction of Flint River, and the river

in

in the ſouth weſtern extreme of this diviſion is the head of *Manatee* river, between which and the *Amaxura*, I ſaw a vaſt number of deer, and the marks of many of the hunting camps of the ſavages. We found the foot ſteps of ſix or eight buffaloes hereabouts, ſo plain as to be convinced of the track being made by thoſe animals, but ſaw none of the animals themſelves; the *Amaxura* or ſome of its branches is not far from the *Manatee*, and where we croſſed it, was an extenſive piece of excellent land.

To compleat the *Topography* of this part, i ſhall maintain that *Rio d'aïs* abounds ſo much in fiſh of various kinds, that a perſon may ſit on the bank, and ſtick the fiſh with a knife, or ſharp ſtick, as they ſwim by; and i have frequently ſhot from four to twelve mullets at one ſhot, nay our boys uſed to go along ſide of the veſſel in the boat, and kill the cat-fiſh with a hatchet, or ſtick. This might well be ranked among the curioſities; but the whole country abounds ſo much in fiſh, that when *St. Auguſtine* flouriſhed moſt, the fiſhermen frequently uſed to allow people, who brought a *Real*, to take as much as they pleaſed, out of their boats.

The reader will obſerve that the rules of geography, with regard to natural limits, have cauſed me to vary a little in the preſent diviſion of the peninſula, from that adopted in page 1 and 2 in this work, which was founded in the climates; but the variation being ſmall, i hope it is excuſeable. I ſhall now proceed with the deſcription or topography of the ſouthern part of the peninſula.

From the latitude 28, the lagoon of *Aïſa*, or Indian River, has not any thing very remarkable,

able, until latitude 27 : 20, where there is a mouth, or outwatering, into the ocean, with ſeveral ſmall inlets within it. This mouth can ſeldom be entered by any veſſel that draws above five feet water ; and before it, in the ſea, are two bars, the inner one having about ten, the outer one ſeventeen feet on it ; and this outer one is near four miles from the land. The ſand before this entrance, is a fine white quickſand, of a particular nature. I have anchored ſeveral times within the diſtance of three or four leagues from this mouth, but not above once or twice without having the cable all eaten through, in the ring of the anchor ; ſometimes i have purchaſed the anchor by a ſingle ſtrand, ſometimes by leſs, at other times by a little more ; and i have loſt above ſix or ſeven anchors, and large grapnels at this place, yet there is nowhere any foul ground, or, in other words, no rocky bottom. At a mile, or more, from the ſhore, and within that diſtance, i think, i have found a few ſhell ſtones, I imagine that this fine quickſand, being very ſharp, by its continual motion chafes and frets the cable quite through, and this, it generally does, in leſs than four and twenty hours.

From this mouth of the lagoon an iſland ſtretches to about the latitude 26 , 55, where there is another mouth, or inlet, caled *Hobé* by the Spaniards ; this iſland is thirty-nine meaſured ſtatute miles long : at twenty-four miles from its north-end are ſeveral high cliffs of a blue ſtone ; theſe are the firſt rocks that lie high out of the water, along the American beach ; they are placed at about high water mark, and a ſmall ridge, or reef, runs ſloping off from the northernmoſt one :

and

and about nine miles further, towards *Hobé* is another parcel; as there is likewiſe at the entrance of *Hobé*, of very ſolid, hard rock; all which, particularly the northernmoſt ones, are excellent landmarks for the ſeamen, going ſouthwards. The remarkable things about this iſland are, that it is a narrow ſlip of beach, and mangrove land; on the beach are always great numbers of pieces of Spaniſh cedar; originally cut on the windward rivers of Cuba, for the uſe of the *Catholic* King's ſhip-yards; but by land floods drove into the Bahama channel, and Gulph ſtream, whence the frequent eaſt-winds force them upon ſoundings, and ſo on this beach; very few pieces are found either north or ſouth of this iſland. The iſland on its weſt-ſide is indented, almoſt regularly into points and bays. Freſh water may be obtained by digging in almoſt every part of the beach. The chief growth here are *mangroves*, *blackwood*, *conocarpus*, *ſalſola* and *uniola*; with a paraſitical plant of the genus *Bromelia*, called wild pine apple. A few ſpots of *hammock*, or upland, are found on this iſland; theſe produce the *zanthoxylum*, *ficus citri folio*, *Coccoloba*, *Maſtick*, *Boraſſus*, and a few trees of the live oak, and willow oak, the *Chryſobolanus*, and the *Cercus Triangularis*, with that kind of *Cactus*, commonly called *Opuntia*. During the ſeaſon the loggerhead turtles land here in vaſt multitudes, to lay their eggs, which the bears profit by; for, led by inſtinct, or otherwiſe, theſe animals come in droves, and dig the eggs out: at this buſineſs they are ſo expert, that they dig wells for their ſupply of water; during their ſtay, they ſometimes fetch down the

wild *Pine* †, which, by its ſtructure naturally contains a conſiderable quantity of rain-water, preſerved in a freſh, ſweet taſte. So induſtrious are the bears at digging up the eggs, that the turtle ſeldom leaves her neſt above a quarter of an hour before they are eaten, inſomuch, that a traveller, if he choſes any of this proviſion, is obliged to watch the turtles coming. I have ſeen the bears approach within five or ſix yards of our camp, at times when we had ſome of theſe eggs, but this ſtretch of *latronical* boldneſs, generally coſt them their lives.

Oppoſite this iſland the ſhore is ſandy and high, here are many rivulets, and the *Beraſſus* here appears to be the maſter of the ſoil, ſcarce any other plant ſhewing itſelf; directly oppoſite the rocks before deſcribed is the mouth of *St. Lucia* river, which has a wide kind of bay, for eight miles up, ſtretching firſt N. E. 40 W. four miles, then W. four miles more, when it divides into two branches, one coming from the ſouth, the other from the N. W. by N. this laſt appearing the principal, i went up it for twenty-four miles, reckoning direct diſtance, and found no where leſs than ſeven feet water; here the river became narrow, and partly on account of the obſtructions by logs, partly on account of the rapidity of the ſtream, I left the veſſel; and going up by land, found the river at laſt to run through a vaſt plain, the bank of the ſtream only being fringed with a few trees.

Here we ſhot what number of deer, and turkies we pleaſed, and might have continued ſo to do, i dare ſay, two months longer; the reaſon of

† *Tillandſia Lingulata.*

of this plenty is, in my opinion, that this tract is ſcarcely ever invaded by the hoſtile ſavages, or yet more deſtructive white hunter; this is the river, which, as i was told by a Spaniſh pilot and fiſherman of good credit, proceeds from the lake *Mayacco*, a lake of ſeventy-five miles in circumference by his account. The man told me that he had formerly been taken by the ſavages, and by them carried a priſoner, in a canoe, by way of this river, to their ſettlements on the banks of the lake; he ſays, that at the diſemboguing of the river, out of the lake, lies a ſmall cedar iſland; he alſo told me that he ſaw the mouth of five or ſix rivers, but whether falling out of, or into the lake, i could not learn of him; probably ſome of the many rivers i croſſed in my journey acroſs this peninſula, fall into it, and it is not improbable that St. John's river originates in it. The large river in Charlotte harbour, by the direction of its courſe, meridian ſituation, and great width, i judge, might, perhaps, ſpring from the ſame fountain; however, the ſavages of *Taloffo Ochaſe* told me, that in going far ſouth, they go round a large water, emptying itſelf into the weſt ſea, i. e. gulph of *Mexico*.

Thus much have i been able to learn of this water, the exploring of which i always intended; whether there is really this lake, or not, i will not be poſitive, but the above circumſtances, joined to a dark account, which the ſavages give of going up St. John's, and coming down another river, to go into ſome far ſouthern region of Eaſt Florida (on which account the name of *Ylacco*, and the name given to *St. Lucia* by the ſavages, both conveying indecent meanings, are

by them given to theſe rivers) ſeems to confirm it. That there is ſome ſuch great water, is further to be gathered from the profuſion of freſh water which this river, *St. Lucia*, pours down. Such is the immenſe quantity that the whole ſound between the abovenamed iſland and the main, though an arm of the ſea, ſituate in a very ſalt region, and in general two miles wide, is very often rendered totally freſh thereby: in ſo much, that it has made the very ſpeculative Mr. *De Brahm* inſiſt upon having ſeen mangrove ſtumps in freſh water. This lake has given riſe to the interſected, and mangled condition in which we ſee the peninſula exhibited in old maps. But to return to the mouth of the river *St. Lucia*, it lays one mile, ſeventy four chains, and ſeventy links, S. W. by S. from the great rocks; the mouth is fifty-four chains, eighty-nine links wide: ſix miles and a quarter N. N. W. from the mouth on the edge of the ſound, lieth the hill by the Spaniards called *Ropa Tendida*, and by us the *Bleach-Yard*, on account of its appearance; being a high hill full of white ſpots, the firſt of any note from the *Neverſinks* in the Jerſeys, to this place, and is a remarkable land-mark. At the mouth of the river is a bay, into which runs a rivulet from the ſouth; Mr. *De Brahm* has honoured this with the name of *Grenville River*, on account of a tract of land here laid out for that gentleman, on one of the moſt unaccountable pieces of white ſand i ever ſaw; which by reaſon of its being covered with a large growth of all ſorts of trees, indicating a fine ſoil, i have always looked upon in the light of a natural curioſity.

From

From this mouth of the river ſouthward the ſound is cut into three branches, by means of two peninſulas of mangroves, divided from the main iſland by theſe lagoons; the branch which diſembogues itſelf at *Hobé* is ſhallow, and full of oyſter banks, about fourteen miles long; however, a ſmall ſchooner, drawing five feet water, was by our people brought through here, and out at *Hobé*. This inlet was ſhut for many years before 1769, but i have ſince ſeen it open till 1773, our people have been encamped on the ſame ſpot where now the water allows egreſs and regreſs to ſuch a craft as the above-mentioned ſchooner, juſt ſufficient to paſs it: This, i ſuppoſe, has been owing to a leſs quantity of water coming down *St. Lucia* river for ſome years, becauſe the Spaniards informed me of its having been open before. In ſhort, this part of the country is ſuch a curioſity, that i have many times lamented the want of leiſure, and means to explore it thoroughly. My journal from the bay of *Tampe*, over land to *Auguſtine*, threw indeed a great light on this; but to my irretrievable loſs i have miſſed it theſe four or five years: I can, however, remark upon the authority of that journal, that the fertile land is found in leſs proportion, in the interior part of the peninſula, in this ſouthern, than in the northern diviſion;—that the ground becomes more ſtony as we approach the meridional regions; that it is likewiſe interſperſed with the ſame kind of romantic ponds, or lakes, as deſcribed on page ,—that in the river *Manatee* is a conſiderable fall of rocks fourteen miles from its mouth;—that above theſe falls the banks are very ſteep;—that this ſteepneſs cauſes the water

to

to riſe about fifty feet above its ordinary ſurface; a circumſtance which this ſhort river has in common with all torrents;—and that the bay of *Tampe*, into which this river falls, is the moſt proper place in all America, ſouth of Halifax, for the rendezvous of a large fleet of heavy ſhips; the country all around being plentifully timbered and watered; the ſoil is poor, ſome of the iſlands along the weſt coaſt excepted, and both this and Charlotte harbour are excellent ſituations for eſtabliſhing fiſheries.

From Hobé to the latitude 25 : 44, the coaſt is all double land, or narrow necks between the ſea; there are ſome rivers and lagoons; on the banks of ſuch of them as are freſh we meet with great bodies of marſh land, which may be improveable. About fifty miles north of the ſouthern point of the main land the coaſt changes its courſe from S. S. E. to directly ſouth; and at the head land, occaſioned by this, is a large hard blue rock on the beach, out of which a large ſtream of very fine freſh water iſſues, guſhing directly into the ocean; there are four little inlets between this rock and latitude 25 : 35; one of theſe not always open; the laſt is in the north end of the firſt iſland, whoſe ſouth end *De Brahm* has thought proper to call Cape Florida, although it is by no means a cape, or head land at all. Weſt from this is the river *Rattones*, being a fine ſtream, and pretty conſiderable, with a little good rich ſoil on its banks, where many tropical plants grow; at its mouth are the remains of a ſavage ſettlement. To the ſouthward of this river is a large body of marſh, through which ſeveral rivulets of fine water empty themſelves into

the

the ſound, back of the keys, which begin here, that a man may here ſtand with one foot in freſh, and the other in ſalt water; nay when the tide is out freſh water boils up through the ſand. From this river and marſh the remainder of the land is a heap of ſtones and rocks, very ſharp, and little water to be found, there being only a few ponds, and theſe dry in a dry ſeaſon. The only growth here is ſhrubby pine. At Sandy point, the ſouthern extremity of the peninſula, are large old fields, being the lands formerly planted by the *Coloosa* ſavages; in latitude 25: 20, is a ſalt lake, and a remarkable *iſthmus*, joining what was formerly called *Cayo largo*, or long key to the main: our reſearches for a paſſage, weſt of the keys, have convinced us of its being faſt to the main land. In the bay of Juan Ponce De Leon, in the weſt ſide of the land, we meet with innumerable ſmall iſlands, and ſeveral freſh ſtreams: the land in general is drowned mangrove ſwamp. On the banks of theſe ſtreams we meet with ſome hills of rich ſoil, and on every one of thoſe the evident marks of their having been formerly cultivated by the ſavages. I went up into ſome high trees on theſe hills, to ſee if i could not ſpy the pine land from their tops, with a view, if i ſaw it any where near, to penetrate to it, through the ſwamps, but the neareſt i ſaw was, by computation, twelve miles off.

Theſe hills, among this dreary mangrove land, have apparently been the laſt retreats, and ſkulking places, of the *Coloosa* ſavages, when their more potent neighbours, the *Creeks*, drove them off the continent. *Punta largo*, or cape *Roman*, in latitude 25: 43, on the weſt-ſide, terminates with this

this great bay, and the ſituation of the country will be beſt learned by conſulting my charts. From this place to latitude 26 : 30 are many inconſiderable inlets, all carefully laid down in the chart ; here is *Carlos Bay*, and the *Colooſa Hatcha*, or *Colooſa* river, with the iſland *San Ybell*, where we find the ſouthern entrance of *Charlotte* harbour abovenamed: Let it ſuffice to refer my readers in general to my maps, after i ſhall have told him that all this point is ſandy pine land, and that deer, turkeys, oyſters, clams, and fiſh abound here ſurpriſingly. The keys, or Martyrs, and the reef will likewiſe be beſt known by inſpection of the charts : theſe are a heap of rocks, very few ſmall ſpots on them being cultivated ; *Matacombé* alone would be worth attention for a ſettlement ; all their productions are tropical, not an oak to be found on any one, and pine trees on one only ; but this reef and keys may be rendered ſerviceable in time of war, to any people who are well acquainted with them ; the reef begins in latitude 25 ; 34, and the channel, between it and the iſlands, will admit a veſſel drawing ſixteen feet water ; for a good way in, and at key *Piſcay*, is a good place for careening craft of ten feet draught : there is good water on it, and if it ſhould fail, the rivulets in the grand marſh will ſupply any quantity for a ſhip of conſiderable force, and her tender might here find the beſt ſtation, for a cruize, of any i know, for there being no more than fifteen leagues from the reef to the *Beminis*, where there is likewiſe water, and on both ſhores plenty of fiſh and turtle, ſhe may lay on either ſide in ſafety. The tender finds a harbour on each ſide, of ten feet at leaſt ;

leaſt; on the Florida ſide, the ſhip laying within the reef, i need not tell the ſeamen that ſhe lay ſafe; thus cruizing acroſs here, or one being on the ſtation on one ſide, and the other on the other, it would be next to an impoſſibility for a ſhip to eſcape them. Of what conſequence this is, in a place through which the Spaniards are obliged to ſend all their treaſures, every one may judge. At *Cayo Tabona*, a large ſhip, even of 60 guns, may ride juſt within the reef, and her tender can always ſupply her with water, either from *Matacombé*, or the above-named marſh, and key *Biſkay*. Few veſſels can come through the gulph without coming in ſight of this place, and it is generally the firſt land made by every ſail of ſhipping after they leave the *Cuba* ſhore, Sound-Point, or Cape-Florida, being juſt N. of it. *Matacombé* is another good ſtation for ſmall veſſels, which may run in here, and the *Bahama* bank affords anchorage in caſe one would chuſe to cruize acroſs. *Cayo Huiſo*, commonly called Key Weſt, is another good ſtation for a ſmall frigate, but not ſo advantageous as the others, nor is there ſo much ſafety here.

Nothing further of note occurs at theſe iſlands, except that at *Cayos Vacos*, and *Cayo Huiſo*, we ſee the remains of ſome ſavage habitations, built, or rather piled up of ſtones; theſe were the laſt refuges of the *Calooſa* nation; but even here the water did not protect them againſt the inroads from the Creeks, and in 1763 the remnant of this people, conſiſting of about eighty families, left this laſt poſſeſſion of their native land, and went to the Havannah. They were a tribe of excellent fiſhermen; this nation was ſtrenuouſly

engaged in the Spaniſh intereſt, they were governed in a manner ſomewhat monarchical, and while they lived on theſe keys, were the dread and terror of the ſeamen; who, not being able to ſteer clear of the dangerous reefs which are here, eſcaped one kind of cruel death, to run into the jaws of one ſtill more terrible: the inhumanity committed by the *Colooſas*, on ſhipwrecked mariners, is ſhocking even to Barbarians. A little key lying before *Matacombé* is a dreadful monument of this, it is called the *Matança*, (i. e.) ſlaughter, from the murder of near four hundred wretched Frenchmen, who, being caſt away, fell into the hands of theſe monſters; who, after keeping them in the adjacent iſlands for ſome time, carried them all to this little key, which now ſerves them for one common grave. The people from Providence, who came here for turtle or Mahogany wood, came always armed, and had frequent bruſhes with them, ſo that the diſlodging of theſe fierce ſavages has been of ſervice to navigation. The unhappy ſufferer by wreck, who eſcapes with life, may now be ſure of ſafety on the ſhore of theſe iſlands. Having mentioned the cutting of mahogany it may be proper to obſerve that little or none now remains here.

I have now given as ample a deſcription of Eaſt Florida, as the nature of this work will allow, and after having made ſome remarks on two curious productious of that profound and ſpeculative philoſopher, *William Gerrard De Brahm*, Eſq; his Majeſty's ſurveyor general of the ſouthern diſtrict of North-America, I ſhall ſay ſomething of the weſtern province.

The

The firſt of theſe conſiſts of ſome obſervations made by this ſingular genius, and tranſmitted to the *Honourable Board of Trade*; ſuch as they are, Dr. Stork has given them to the publick, as to be depended upon.

Firſt he ſays, "in latitude 27 the plantable "land is ſcarce, except the mangrove ſwamps, "for the cultivation of *Barilla*." What reader, ſeeing this, would not imagine that theſe ſwamps were improveable, but they are a ſoil drowned by the ſea to the depth of three or four feet; often only ſand banks, and as the roots of trees grow in arches, above ground, they are for the moſt part impenetrable, and ſome totally inacceſſible to either man or beaſt.

2. "The trees and ſhrubs——are the *arbore-* "*ous grape vine*, and *ſpice bark trees*, the *Hiccora*, "*Plumb* and *Panao*." I ſhall inform my botanical reader, that this *arboreous grape vine* is the *Coccolaba*, or grape tree, well known in the Weſt-Indies, which has no manner of affinity with the *vitis* or vine, the ſpice bark trees are no other than two ſpecies of *Lauri*, one of them the *Laurus Borbonia*, or Red Bay, having its aromatic juices more concentrated in this climate than further north, and through the influence of the ſun it is no more than a mere ſhrub.

The *Hiccora*: Anno 1772 he has learned to call this by its right name, Hickorey; but what ſhall we ſay, when it is not poſſible to find a ſingle plant of this kind in the ſouthern part of the province; nor is there any thing that looks like a plumb, except the *Chryſobalanus*, *Icaco*, or Co-co-plumb, not at all alike in kind to the *pruni* which one would judge to be meant by the plumb.

The *Papao* i gueſs is the *Carica*, vulgarly called *Papaw*, of which we find a good number.

3. " From latitude 26 : 40 to 27, *there* is a " branch of Hillſborough river, terminating in " freſh water marſh, the principal river depart- " ing ſouthward."

Compare this with my deſcription of the ſound into which *St. Lucia* river falls.

What a piece of accuracy do we diſcover in the numbers 4693, 9386, 24, 300, 950, 2800, and 37961 acres! this is of the ſame ſtamp with the matchleſs exactneſs of latitudes 25d. 48m. 33ſ. 26d. 53m. 35ſ. 24d. 57m 6ſ. &c. in his map prefixed to that curious publication, the Atlantic Pilot.

4. " The weſt ſide—may do in time for the " cultivation of the *Opuntia* plant." When we know, that this identical plant is a weed and meer nuiſance in the very ſpot here mentioned; pray what is meant by a hope of its becoming a cultivated article in the ſoil where it grows ſpontaneouſly in great abundance?

5. " The cape and ſea-coaſt——whoſe luxu- " rious plants are the pomegranate, &c."

Not a pomegranate in all the country, except what is cultivated in the gardens, at and near *St. Auguſtine*.

6. " The main on the weſt of Cape River ap- " pears to be all high land, and is chiefly cover- " ed with cedar, oak, mulberry, and gum." No ſuch river as Cape river known to any but this extraordinary inventor himſelf, nor is there a ſprig of any of the above plants found within many miles of the cape.

7. " In latitude 25 : 35, the main upon a " due

" due weſt line is a mile acroſs, and there ap-
" pears a river *four* miles over, which comes ei-
" ther from Tampe Bay, St. John's river, or is
" the mouth of Hillſborough river, which in
" latitude 26 : 50 takes a S. W. departure."
Every letter of this is a forgery of the brain of this lunatic writer, no river is found at or near this latitude, but *Rio Rattones* above deſcribed; what a pity it is, that the conjectures or wiſhes of ſuch dreamers did not ſometimes become real! Either of the communications there mentioned would open a moſt beneficial addition to the eaſe and convenience of our navigation.

8. " No fiſh in the white waters round the
" cape, at leaſt there were none on May 13 and
" 29, nor is any other animal ſpecies there ex-
" cept ſea birds, and the track of only one bear
" was obſerved." Every body that is acquainted with the immenſe variety and quantity of fiſh found here, will naturally imagine, that the fiſh were retired on May 13 and 29, to ſome general council or meeting of the finny nations, and the gentlemen from providence, who come ſometimes here for the diverſion of hunting a ſpecies of deer peculiar to theſe iſlands, and very numerous on them, can witneſs for me how true this laſt aſſertion is; not to mention the bald pate, and ſmall American turtle dove, the red bird, the ſtare and American fieldfare, nor the racoon, which ſeems here to be an univerſal inhabitant in vaſt numbers, nor the amphibious crocodile and turtle.

9. " No ſign of winter effect is viſible, nor
" any ſhrub or tree ſpecies of thoſe in the nor-
" thern climate, &c. &c.

How

How well does this agree with the trees mentioned in the ſixth article, and the impudent faſeſhood of the *pomegranate* is here a ſecond time introduced with an " of which i had a full proof " by the *pomegranate*, of which the trees are full " of bloſſoms with half ripe and full ripe fruit."

10. " At Shark's-tail, Middle-river, and the " head of Cape-river, are a few live oaks," and in the next article we find " hickory, live oak, " mulberry, ſmooth black yellow pine." The very choice for timber!

11. This agrees pretty well with the aſſertion in No. 9.—— The concluſion of theſe fine remarks, is a recommendation of laying the land out in *large tracts*, the very thing which has proved the means of keeping the country uncultivated.

Can we any longer be ſurprized at the little, not to ſay perverſe knowledge the people of the mother-country have of America, when we find principal officers miſrepreſenting facts to the chief rulers of the land? I make no doubt but many good folks, in other offices, have as much miſrepreſented facts of another kind, as this man has done the deſcription of the affairs in the department he was intruſted with.

But if this narrative deſerves contempt, and to be expoſed, the latter production of 1772, with its very improper title of Atlantic Pilot, evidently bearing marks of inſanity, demands our pity; here we ſee an account of an unnatural change in the face of the country, which for many reaſons never could have happened but in the brain of this Bedlamite, from whence alſo ſeems to originate the name of *Tegeſta*; he turns one peninſula into broken iſlands, another into ſunken rocks;

rocks; what a havock of jumbling this Hercules makes! when in this unmeaning *chaos* he joins and disjoins, turns water into land, and land into water, calls the current from Baffin's frozen bay, to join with the velocious ſtream of Torrid Mexico and Florida; and again makes them form a *vortex* reverting back to their points of departure; magnifies a parcel of pitiful flats into a gulph, with the ſonorous name of Sandwich, or into a lake with the *pretorian* title of grand affixed to it, and all this does not coſt him more trouble than a few ſtrokes of his inimitable pen; nay more, he metamorphoſes the hunting ſeat of the Prince of Orange into a wolf, and turns a woman juſt delivered from child bed travail, and her child, into a paradiſe ‡.

Not to ſay much of his arrogant falſe claim of his having diſcovered the navigation through the channel, inſide of the reef, which numbers of people, even Engliſhmen, knew better forty years ago, than it is likely he ever will know it; I cannot forbear mentioning the alteration of well-known names in a place of ſo much danger; can the arbitrary impoſition of the names of *Dartmouth*, *Littleton*, *Pownal*, *Hawke*, *Egmont*, *Huntingdon*, *Holbourn*, *Keppel*, *Fox*, *Townſhend*, *Ellis*, *Oglethorp*, *Reynolds*, *Lyſon*, and about a legion more, of inferior great and little men, make up for the miſtakes they may occaſion? Or can theſe

‡ Key *Loo*, ſo called from the *Loo* frigate which was caſt away on it, he has changed into *Loup*, the French name for a *wolf*, and the two keys by the Engliſh called Soldier Keys, from the multitude of thoſe animals found on and near them, are by the Spaniards titled *La Parida y Su Iiguela*, but this curious raver has called them *Los Paradizos*.

theſe ſtateſmen and heroes owe him thanks for the confuſion occaſioned by the jumbling of their names, like dice in a box? The formation of a reef, "out of ſight of any land," weſt of the dry Tortugas, is likewiſe a child of his own brain; and we are apt to think him finding fault with the goodneſs of the Creator, in not making ſhoals enough, for there is no ſuch bank any where weſt of the dry Tortugas.

But his placing ſoundings in his draught deeper by three feet than they really are; and his adviſing people who intend to go through the Gulph of Florida, to take their departure at the Havannah, and ſteer due north, in order to make, what he calls, Cape Florida, ſeems as if calculated on purpoſe to deſtroy ſhip, goods and people; happy is it for me that our preſent navigators know the navigation ſo well, and for the benefit of trade i hope his pamphlet will never ſerve as a guide to any man that is a novice, and chances to come this way.

As a ſpecimen of his marine knowledge, obſerve him telling us, that at times of a weſterly wind, the Atlantic coaſt is the moſt eligible lee for navigators who do not chuſe to take the ſtream; as he has juſt before defined this Atlantic coaſt to be the Florida ſhore, it muſt conſequently at ſuch ſeaſons be the weather ſhore; but ceaſe to wonder at this, when i tell you, that the method of his own, which he refers to, for taking the variation, is a mechanical one, and very tedious, and that he did not know how to do it aſtronomically, by an amplitude of the ſun, till i taught him in 1769. I am almoſt weary of removing all this dirt, and would leave the man

and

and his performance, but my love for truth in natural hiſtory obliges me to trace him, even through his preſumptuous rummaging of the kingdoms of nature, of which he knows as little as of nautical affairs.

To ſupport the ridiculous hypotheſis, he has broached about the change of his ancient *Tegeſta*, he ſays, amongſt other arguments, in page 9, " myſelf and people, employed by me in this " ſervice" (of which number, i the preſent writer was one) " have theſe three years obſerved " many places where freſh encroachments ap- " pear to this effect: even the vaſt quantity of " ſcattered large old trees, waſhed out with their " roots on all ſhores of the iſlands, and out in " the ſhallow ſea, between the iſlands and the " main, teſtify, that they lay on the ſpot of the " former continent and peninſulas, where their " genus and ſpecies formerly flouriſhed." I came through this place four years before I knew this man, and from that time down to laſt year i have ſeen many changes and alterations in the poſitions of theſe trees, ſome of which come down the rivers in Cuba, in land-floods, but more down the Miſſiſſipi; and by the currents are here forced on the reefs and keys ‖.

A few of thoſe from Cuba being tropical, might ſerve to ſupport the reaſoning of the Atlantic Pilot, but many kinds never grew in Florida; the coco-nuts found on the ſhore likewiſe convince us, that Cuba ſends much of her outcaſt

‖ Let us for a moment calculate, how long the worms will leave ſuch a tree as a monument, and we ſhall find, that this change of *Tegeſta*, at leaſt in part, muſt have happened of late years.

this way; but when we conſider that nine out of ten of the trees thus found are oak, cypreſs, red cedar, elms, and above all, beach of the greateſt magnitude (none of which ever grew in this climate) it is done with *Tegeſta*, ſhe is fallen never to riſe again!

He has however this time forgot the *pomegranate*; but how do we know what is meant by *Papaios*, diſtinguiſhed from *Papaw*; ſome new genus in botany, no doubt, has the Spaniſh name of the Papaw beſtowed on it by this excellent naturaliſt. Obſerve him laſt of all turn ſyſtematiſt, when he tells us "that a ſpecies of prawn "(ſhrimps growing to the ſize of five pounds" (he might have ſaid fifteen "are improperly "called lobſters;" *ô Philoſophus eximius!* The lobſter which is the firſt in rank among the families of *Aſtaci*, muſt here give way to the moſt diminutive of the whole genus, which is placed firſt, and that forſooth becauſe in *Mr. De Brahm*'s opinion there can be no lobſters without claws: —but enough of this, let us proceed to the *topography* of Weſt Florida.

The river *Apalachicola* is the boundary of the two provinces; before its mouth eaſtward, and a little weſtward, we meet with St. George's Iſlands, well known for the ſufferings of *Pierre Viaud*, &c. after ſhipwreck here. I muſt remark, that the relation we have of this affair is a great exaggeration of facts; people in that ſituation may ſuffer, but on a place like this, where plenty of fiſh, crabs and oyſters are to be had, as well as water, for the trouble of digging, their ſufferings cannot be great. Our pity is much leſſened upon finding a reaſonable man ſo

debilitated

debilitated by fright and deſpair, that he cannot make uſe of a plenty provided by providence. All along this coaſt fiſh are in ſuch abundance, that both myſelf and people, when not inclined to fiſh with a hook and line, have ſtruck many hundreds with a ſtick ſharpened at one end, and hardened in the fire, in lieu of a harpoon; i will not mention much about the exaggeration of diſtreſs, which runs through the whole of this performance; but the ſtory of Madame *La Couture* bringing a turkey and her eggs, out of the woods, at the time when relief had reached her fellow ſufferers, appeared to me too palpable a falſhood to be credited, becauſe theſe birds were never found on any iſland from Carolina to this place, except formerly on Amelia iſland; (which is ſeparated from the main only by a little creek, in ſome places ſcarce ten feet acroſs) but ſuppoſing one to have been accidentally here, i will readily allow that the eggs may have been found, and taken by Madame *La Couture*; yet as theſe birds are the moſt ſhy animal we meet with, (inſomuch that a deer, in places where he is frequently diſturbed, is incomparably more eaſy to come at than turkies) certainly ſhe muſt have been a more expert huntreſs than ever i heard of before, and i ſhould be after all very much inclined to think that the poor woman, and her companions, had miſtaken the Mexican vulture for a turkey; but that from the relation we naturally judge there were many eggs in the neſt, which overſets that kind of reconciliation: wherefore, finding it was at the time of their relief, i went to Mr. *Simpſon*, (the interpreter for the ſavages, who was one of the people in the boat at the time of affording

help to thoſe unhappy people, and is a man of veracity) and aſked him if it was true that the woman brought in a turkey, and her neſt, of which he and his companions ſhared; he told me that it was no other than a crab of the kind called in the ſouthern province a king crab, and to the northward a horſe-ſhoe, but he ſaw no eggs of any kind. As this fiſh bears a diſtant reſemblance to a turtle, perhaps Mr. *Viaud* took it for ſuch, and wrote *tortue*, which may have been tranſlated turtle too, but by a miſtake common enough in printing-offices, the compoſitor may have made it a turkey *, and the corrector, either through inadvertency, or not conſidering how largely he launched into the marvellous, left it ſo.

But to proceed, a little weſt of theſe iſlands we find Cape Blaze in latitude 29 : 47, and the Bay of St. Joſeph, to the N. W. of which is St. Andrew's Bay, and W. by N. from here, *Santa Roſa* bay and iſlands; in the eaſt end of this bay is *Matto Hatcha*; which laſt running E. and W. makes the eaſtern ſhore of Penſacola entrance. All theſe places are very arid, dry ſand, near the coaſt; farther in towards the Upper Creek country, which is in ſome meaſure deſcribed in page 91, it is ſcarcely known, but what i have ſeen of it

* I find mention made alſo of a *buſtard*, it is well known that there is not one of this kind of birds in all America; however a *buſtard* is in French called *outarde*, and this is the name given by the French to the blackhead Canada gooſe, which abounds here in the ſeaſon, when *Viaud* was on this coaſt, this the tranſlator ſeems not to have been informed of. I perceived many ſymptoms of an imperfect knowledge of the French language, by the tranſlator, however, this is not a place to point them out, only out of complaiſance to the ſex, i will inform her that *caſſe tete* means a *tomahawk*.

it is much like Georgia, and the north part of Eaſt Florida.

Penſacola has about an hundred and eighty houſes in it, built in general in a good taſte, but of timber: the town is laid out in an oblong ſquare, near the foot of an hill, called *Gage-hill*; and by means of two rivulets of excellent water, which almoſt ſurround it, is the beſt watered of any i know on the continent. The harbour is ſpacious, and here are three conſiderable rivers, viz. *Eſcambé*, *Cheſter*, and *Middle* rivers, beſides ſeveral lagoons and rivulets of no note. *Cheſter-river* is full of iſlands, great and ſmall, abounding principally with the *Cupreſſus Thyoides*. *Middle-river* communicates with ſeveral lakes; the water of this river is ſo cold, that the ſavages call it *Weewa Caſupka*, which in the Creek language ſignifies cold water. The *Eſcambé* is navigable a conſiderable way up, but rapid, and about twenty miles from Penſacola we begin to meet with ſome ſpots of fertile land, variouſly timbered. Twenty-eight miles from the town, and on the banks of this river, on an eminence, are the remains of a Spaniſh out-guard, or ſtocado fort; about ſeventy-eight miles from town, this river forks, a branch called *Weewa Oka*, or *Weeoka*, by us little *Scambé*, coming from the N. W. runs into the main river; this branch where it is croſſed is about ſixty feet wide, and the ford is a bottom of ſmall gravel, which is not common here; the road that croſſes it leads from Penſacola to the Upper Creek nation; the diſtance is two hundred and ten miles; and the heads of theſe rivers are all within a few miles of the ſavage towns. Fourteen miles farther weſt from Penſacola, is the *Rio Perdido*, or loſt river, of inconſiderable

ſiderable length and navigation; and about forty miles weſt of this, we meet with *Mobile*, *Tombéchbé* and *Taënſa* bay and rivers; into which laſt the *Alibama*, or *Cooſa* river falls. All the country between this laſt river and *Cheſter-river*, and probably all to *Apalachicola* is very favourable for ſtocks of cattle; many noble cane branches, mixed in the pine land, affording them excellent food, and they multiply very rapidly. Lovers of minute geography, by examining my maps, will find that the lower part of the coaſt between *Mobile* bay and *Perdido*, and ſo on to *Penſacola*, may eaſily be made navigable for boats in land, there being already a rolling road out of the river *Bon ſecour*, into a creek running into *Perdido*; but this being mere matter of ſpeculation we muſt leave the practical part to ſome future generation. The country weſt from *Mobile* bay, to *Nita Albany*, or Bean-camp, at lake *Maurepas*, is much of the ſame kind as that already deſcribed; only we find more fertile planting ground in it. The timber here is nearly the ſame as in the north part of Eaſt-Florida; but it is worthy of remark, that not one of the *Boreſſus*, or Cabbage tree, is found along this whole extent from *Apalachia* weſtward; which does not agree well with a report in a letter to a certain *George Lookup*, Eſq; in *Robinſon*'s hiſtory of *Florida*, where he ſays, that the cabbage trees along this coaſt, rear their lofty heads above all others; but ſo curious a piece as this pamphlet is ought not to be ranſaked, I will therefore proceed to give ſome extracts from my journals through the weſtern parts of Weſt Florida, as being the beſt way to give my reader a true idea of this country.

In

In the following pages the diſtances are accurately meaſured, by ſuch methods as circumſtances permitted.

On Saturday the 20th September, 1771, at 4 P. M. i left *Mobile*, and encamped that night in pine land, near a ſpring to the north of the path, and at the foot of an hill, ſix miles from town, to the weſt a little by ſouth.

21ſt. *Opaya Mingo*, a Chicaſaw warrior, of our train, was this morning ſick, on which occaſion i ſaw one of his companions cut his temples with a flint, and applying a cane about four inches long, to the ſcarification, ſuck it till he nearly filled it with blood, then threw it out, and repeated it ſeveral times; this is ſomething like cupping: we were obliged to leave theſe two behind, and proceeded this day chiefly to the N. W. through pine land, and encamped this night at the head of a branch of Dog-river, fifteen miles and three quarters from town.

22d. Croſſed ſeveral creeks, and headed others, running all eaſtward; we advanced twenty miles and a half through pine land, and encamped near a creek called pine logg; in the afternoon we came to the firſt conſiderable aſcent, where the ground is gravelly, here the road goes of to *Yoani*.

23d. This morning we went over a very narrow ridge, leaving Dog-river on the left, and *Tombechbé* on the right of us. Croſſed ſeveral heads of cane branches, running different ways; ſaw many graſs ponds, and Indian camps, and croſſed a large cane branch, called by the Chactaws *Cooſak Hattak falaya*; proceeded eleven miles and encamped on the waters of *Paſca Oo-*

colo

coloo river; here ſaw a good deal of cheſtnut and other timber, beſides pine trees.

24th. This morning we came paſt ſome good low grounds, and ſaw the firſt oaks of the kind called black jacks: croſſed ſeveral creeks, and went through ſome ſwamps and oak land; encamped near a branch, and here ſaw the hieroglyphick No. 1, in page 108, advanced this day twenty-one miles.

25th. This morning we had a great deal of rain, which continued by ſhowers all day; the two ſavages left behind joined us. We advanced but five miles and a half; encamped this night about two miles W. S. Weſtward from the path, near a lake abounding in excellent fiſh, particularly pikes, perch, and red eyed chubs, of a very ſuperior ſize.

26th. Being rainy we lay by, and recruited our proviſion with abundance of fiſh, two deer, and two turkies.

27th. Went over a good deal of gravelly ground, moſtly pine land, and encamped at *Bogue Hooma*, (i. e. Red Creek, our boundary with the Chactaws; here we ſaw the firſt rocks on the ſouth ſide of the creek: we travelled only eleven miles and a quarter; the creek being very high we were obliged to ſpend a great while in ferrying our goods, and ſwimming our horſes over; the ſtream runs weſtward;—ſhot three turkies.

28th. After ſix miles travelling, we came to oak-land, being ſhort hills, and all day we found the land pretty much mixed;—croſſed many ſprings and rivulets;—ſaw the head of a ſavage ſtuck on a pole, with many other marks of our being on the theatre of war; we left the road to

Chicaſawhay

Chicasawhay on the left;—all this afternoon we leave a considerable stream on our right, running N. eastward:—advanced this day fifteen miles and a quarter, the last three or four miles the land was chiefly oak-land: at night we encamped at a war-camp, near a branch running into the above stream, from which we were one and an half mile to the west, using the ordinary precautions *.

29th. Ascended and descended several considerably steep hills; found the land mixed, chiefly oak; at three o'clock went through the savannah called *Poos coos Paähaw*, about one mile and an half across, with here and there some points of wood land on it; and again crossed some hilly oak land; and after thirteen miles travel encamped near a branch of *Pasca Ooccloo* river; here a very plain path goes eastward.

N. B. The water in the savannah has a taste of lime.

30th. Almost as soon as we left camp we crossed a branch of *Bogue aithee Tanné*, vulgarly *Bakkatané*, having the low land of this river constantly in sight, about half a mile to our left; travelled chiefly through pine land, and some *hurricane ground* †, and after journeying eleven miles and three quarters, we encamped at *Hoopah Ullah*, (i. e.) the noisy owl, where we saw the hieroglyphick No. 2, page 102.

1st October, went through a vast variety of hilly, stony, boggy, swampy and oak land; passed some very elevated hills, and crossed several

* See page 189. † Tracts of wood formerly destroyed by hurricanes are so called.

rivulets: encamped at *Oku Ullah* (i. e.) the noiſy water, a creek; having gone twenty-two miles and an half this day, we paſſed by three graves within the ſpace of three quarters of a mile from each other, the firſt of a ſoldier of a detachment that went to fort *Tombeehbe*, the ſecond of a ſavage, who went by the name of rum-drinker, after whom the hill is called rum drinker's hill; and the third of one Mr. Brown, a very conſiderable trader in the Chactaw and Chicaſaw nations.

2d. At four miles diſtance from our laſt night's encapment we croſſed *Pancha Waya*, the laſt water running to the ſouth-weſt, and two miles further we left the path going to *Cooſa* on our left. Our road all this day led through the ſame kind of rugged, uneven, ſtony, gravelly and ſwampy ground as yeſterday, as alſo a hurricane ground and ſcrub hill; ſome of the ſtones we ſaw were very large, and the hills conſiderably elevated: having travelled eighteen miles and three quarters, we encamped a quarter of a mile weſt of a Chactaw village called *Paonte*, near a delightful ſpot, but deſerted on account of the war; here we got ſome peaches, plumbs, and grapes; ſix miles W. S. W. from the camp is the *Cooſa* town, of Chactaw. A ſhowery day.

3d. Very heavy rain from midnight till noon, at two miles and an half from our camp left the road going to *Haänka Ullah* (i. e.) the bawling gooſe, a chactaw town, to the left; travelled only four miles and an half through mixed but pretty even land, and encamped near a branch of *Sook han Hatcha* river, the ſtreams being very high the ferriage delayed us much.

4th. This day we met ſome traders and ſavages,

and

and travelled through ſeveral deſerted fields, and one deſerted town, called *Sapa-Peſah*: the ground is generally very uneven;—here we croſſed ſeveral paths, and were joined by three Chactaw ſavages, who extricated us from a great difficulty, as we found no convenient logs to ferry us over a large branch of *Soak hanatcha*, till they ſhewed us a place half a mile down the ſtream; and for a ſmall conſideration ferried our goods over, while we ſwam our horſes acroſs: having traveled ten miles and three quarters, we encamped on the north bank of this ſtream, called *Hatchatipke*.

5th. We came after half a mile's journey to a deſerted town, called *Etuck Chukké* (i. e.) *Blue Wood*. This morning, at day-break, we heard the report of fire arms, at a little diſtance, which, being very often repeated, we ſoon gueſſed it was what we found it to be a little while after; that is, an action; the ſavages always attacking either at day-break, or at ſun-ſet; croſſed many paths and fields, and after ten miles and an half journey, we found one of the victorious Chactaws, preſenting us the freſh ſcalp of one of his enemies. Here were the firſt inhabited houſes, being a kind of ſuburb to the town of eaſt *Abecka*; here we croſſed the branch of *Sookhanatcha* river, which gives name to all the reſt, and at a mile and an half further, we came to the town itſelf, and put up at the houſe of an old trader, called *Hewitt*, and were civilly treated by both ſavages and whites. Of the firſt we found here three chiefs, not a little exulting in their late victory, and the women in every part of the town were performing their ſavage *orgies* and dances; we

ſtaid here till the 9th, when part of my company proceeded to the Chicaſaw nation.

9th. Agreed with a very worthy young man, one Mr. *George Dow*, to ſerve me as a guide through the Chactaw nation; and that day we went through *Ebeetap-Oocoola*, a town on a hill, where the ſavages have a large ſtockade fort in their own manner. Such there are alſo at *Abeika*, which two places are the frontiers againſt the Creeks. We went this day ſouth weſtward, through *Chooka-hoola*, part of *Oka-hoolah*, through *Hoola-taſſa*, which laſt is four miles from *Abeeka*; then nearly ſouth three miles more to the ridge of eaſt *Moka-Laſſa*, then about a mile and an half weſtward to *Ebeetap-oocoolo-cho*, where we ſtopt at the houſe of one *Foſter*, a trader; then went nearly S. E. for two miles, and came to the middle of eaſt *Moka Laſſa*; from here continued S. E. a little more than two miles, and entered *Haänka-Ullah*; ſtill went on the ſame courſe for a mile and a quarter, and then were at the middle of ſaid town, and refreſhed ourſelves for an hour. The town of *Oka Looſa* lays S. E. three miles from here; then returned, in a round about manner, through another road, back to Mr. *Foſter*'s houſe, where we ſlept.

10th. Proceeded firſt W. N. W. about two miles, afterwards W. S. W. for a mile and a quarter; this brought us into *Oka-attakkala*, a neat little place for a town of ſavages; went about a quarter of a mile into it, and put up at the houſe of Mr. *Dow*, my guide. About three miles W. S. W. from this are the ruins of *Eaſt Congeata*, deſtroyed in the civil war of theſe people, by the weſtern party. Hitherto travelled

chiefly

chiefly through corn-fields; we lay here till the 21ſt, partly to refreſh our horſes, and partly on account of a violent fever, which I was troubled with; during this time agreed with a ſavage to join us as a guide to the S. W. of the nation, his name was *Pooſcoos-Mingo*, or king of the children.

21ſt. Went S. weſtward, a mile and an half into *Yanatoe*, croſſing many paths, and ſeveral old, as well as ſome cultivated fields, which lay interſperſed in the woods; croſſed *Bague-ſooka*, and the heads of *Poreetamogue*, with ſeveral other creeks, and after riding ſomething better than ſeven miles and an half, moſtly S. W. we aſcended a long hill, ſteep in its firſt riſing, and when on its top we had the view of a high ridge, to N. W. with a deep valley between them. Went ſouth, and after a mile and a half croſſed *Bogue Chitto*, a large creek, which runs S. E. into the river *Bogue-aithé-Tannè*, in three quarters of a mile more went through the deſerted old field of *Cooſak Baloagtaw*; about a mile and a half further we croſſed a creek of that name, emptying into *Bogue-Chitto*: a quarter of a mile further we croſſed a large pond upon a beaver dam, and in half a mile more ſtopped to bait, at a creek called *Pooſcoos te Kalè*, in a deſerted village of that name. At near three o'clock proceeded S. W. by W. after a little more than two miles, croſſed a deſerted field called *Pooſcoos tekale*, *Hoca*; two miles and three quarters further croſſed *Tallé Katta*, a large branch of *Chicaſaw-hay* river, then came into pine land, for the firſt time of theſe fourteen days: went ſouth, a little weſterly, and came to camp at a place, where we found ſome old camps convenient, near the head of a branch

of

of *Talle Hatta*; having this day travelled twenty-two miles and an half, all in woods.

22d. We travelled through various kinds of wood, and ſomething of uneven ground, chiefly to ſouth; and at twelve miles from our camp we croſſed a river near eighty feet wide, here ſaid to be the principal branch of *Chicaſawhay* river; and is called *Aitheeſuka*; the ford is a flat rock, the land on each ſide here is pine land, and riſes high above the bed of the river: continue in pine land four miles and a half more, then come into low land, croſs ſome creeks and ſavannahs, and after having travelled twelve miles more, chiefly S. E. from the river, i came to camp on the ſide of a pine hill. My weakneſs not ſuffering me to go further, i ordered our people forward to *Chicaſawhay*, to provide neceſſaries, except one lad, whom I kept to accompany me.

23d. South eaſtward through ſome hurricane and other uneven ground for five miles and an half, then went through intervale for a mile and a half, at the end of this we go up a conſiderable hill, from whoſe top we ſee a very high blue ridge to E. and S. E. a great way from us, and at the end of nine miles and three quarters we arrived at *Chicaſawhay*, and ſtayed at the houſe of *Ben James*.

24th and 25th. Employed in going to and coming from *Yoani*. The road that leads to this place is chiefly pine and ſhrubby oak land: at five miles from *Chicaſawhay*, a middling branch of *Chicaſawhay* is croſſed: it is called *Owhan lowy*; judging this ſufficient to give an idea of the face of the country here, i ſhall only ſubjoin that on the 7th November, having made a circuit

cuit of the nation, we returned to *Hewitt*'s houſe at *Abeeka*, our road from *Chicaſawhay*, leading chiefly through fine improved, and many among them rich fields, and a large number of conſiderable towns and villages of the ſavages.

10th November, having diſmiſſed *Pooſcoos-Mingo*, we went to the Chicaſaw nation, through a road leading in general over ſtiff clay land; ſaw very little elſe but white oak, and that no where tall, occaſioned by the ſtiffneſs of the land; croſſed only two rivers of note, one *Naſhooba*, the other *Oka tebbee haw*; no remarkable aſcent or deſcent on the whole road; croſſed many ſavannahs, the diſtance is about an hundred and fifty-nine miles from *Abeeka*, to the *Chicaſaw* towns; (deſcribed in page 63) where we arrived on the 18th November, and put up at the houſe of one *Buckles*, a trader: our courſe hitherto has chiefly been north. Here i ſtayed till the 8th December, and obſerved this houſe to lie in nearly 35° north latitude.

I cannot help relating in this place an anecdote of Mr. Commiſſary in this nation: this Gentleman had engaged to me, and promiſed Mr. *Stuart*, that i ſhould have all the neceſſary aſſiſtance i might want; i went to his plantation, which lays at *Paën titack*, eleven miles from the place where he ought to reſide, and to my aſtoniſhment i was here treated worſe than in any place i had been at: ſo far from providing horſes, which was one of the articles i wanted, i was obliged to give him one back, which i had borrowed at the Chactaw, in lieu of one that failed me. I ſaw clearly, that i was an unwelcome gueſt in every reſpect; however, i procured

from

from him a recommendatory note, to the above *Buckles*, and he told me that *Buckles* knew of two canoes, the choice of which i might have for my intended voyage, down the river; but when i ſpoke to Mr. *Buckles* on the ſubject, he denied ever having ſpoke about any canoes, nor did he know of any, and as to the note, i might have any thing i wanted on my own credit, by giving an order on Mr. *Stuart*; but with the commiſſary he had nothing to do. Thus i was obliged to do all myſelf at laſt; this is in ſome meaſure an inſtance of the inutility of the commiſſary's office; i ſent Mr. *Dow* with three negroes to the river, to make a canoe. During my ſtay here, on the firſt December, it began to freeze very hard; on the fourth the ice in town-creek was four or five inches thick; and on the 6th in the morning we could ſcarce keep water from freezing in a cloſe houſe, and near a good fire; but i ſaw no ſnow during all the time of my ſtay. Nothing was more entertaining than the ſurprize of the ſavages, at ſeeing me take obſervations of the ſolar altitude, the mercury i uſed for an artificial horizon, was a matter of great wonder to them, particularly, when i ſhewed them its diviſibility, and the ſucceeding coheſion of the globules.

8th December, in the afternoon i proceeded from Buckles's houſe, and travelled E. by S. nearly five miles and a half; then croſſed *Nohoola-inalchubba*, or the town Creek, mentioned in page 63, then went about S. S. E. for a mile and a quarter more, and encamped on a hill, near a ſmall lake, in which we heard all night a great number of ducks. We met this day eleven

ſavages.

ſavages, of the Creek nation, and three more of the Natchez, who live with the Upper Creeks, coming through the *Chicaſaw* field, with the *Death Whoop*: they had ſurprized a hunting camp of *Chactaws*, on a branch of the river *Yaaſoo*, called *Tallé Hatcha*, at a time when the hunters were abſent, and took away all their ſkins, two horſes, and five women of the *Chacchooma* tribe, belonging to weſt *Congeta*, in the *Chactaw* nation: they took care not to ſtay for the return of the men, as the camp indicated them to be numerous; but becauſe they had not a ſcalp to ſhew, theſe devils incarnate had ſcalped the eldeſt of the women they carried into captivity, yet let the wretch live, and ſhe was one of the number we ſaw. The *Chicaſaws* were all abroad that day; but i obſerved by the behaviour of ſome ſuperannuated fellows, that they diſliked the *Creeks* behaviour of bawling the *Death Whoop* through the field; and having aſked the reaſon, i was told, that as they were neutrals in this war, they did not like to give umbrage, which the *Chactaws* might take at this, and if their men had been at home, they would not have ſuffered this ſmall victorious party to make uſe of this kind of triumphal entry here; thus we ſee theſe ſavages ſtrictly obſerving a neutrality in form.

9th. Proceeded, and at 3 miles, ſaw a large *tumulus*, which was the only remarkable thing in this road, we went over one ſteep hill, and croſſed three or four branches, and the laſt two miles and a half of the road we ſaw much pine mixed with the oak; having travelled nearly twenty three miles on a courſe S. E. by S. we arrived about four o'clock P. M. on the bank of *Tom-*

bechbè river, here called the twenty mile creek.

10th. Examined the canoe, but found her too heavy for our purpoſe, therefore diſpatched Mr. *Dow* (who knew the ground, and was well acquainted with the woods) to ſee if he could not find ſome canoe of the ſavages; he found one about noon, in the mouth of *Nahoola inalchubba*, two miles and a half weſt from our camp, therefore went and encamped on the bank of ſaid creek; the oppoſite bank was very high ſteep hills, above hundred and twenty feet perpendicular, and ſome pines on their ſummits; found the canoe a very ſorry one, but it being *Hopſon*'s choice, muſt venture in her.

11th. We ſpent in fitting our craft; ſince the 7th we had very bad weather here, one hour it is ſharp, clear, and intenſely cold, the next cloudy, ſultry, with lightning, thunder, rain and hail, the wind veering round the horizon in an incredible manner, which made my ſituation very diſagreeable.

12th. We had ſome tolerable weather, and finiſhed fitting our boat, but ſhe was ſo miſerable a tool, that i believe few men would have ventured in her.

13th. All the company returned to the nation with the horſes; kept only Mr. *Dow*, and my ſervant, to be the companions of this fluvial expedition; while we ſtaid here we caught ſome beavers. At half an hour paſt one, P. M. we proceeded from our camp in *Nahoola Inalchubba*, or Town Creek, and in twenty minutes were in the river. We paſſed one bluff, where the French formerly had a fortified trading houſe, about one mile below the mouth of the creek, on the

the weſt bank; we paſſed one creek on each ſide, and left three ſmall gravelly iſlands on our left; for the reſt of the land was low on both ſides;—having come five miles and an half we came to camp on a ſand bar at half an hour paſt three, P. M. the river pretty rapid, and found only one log, which detained us a quarter of an hour.

14th. Proceeded at ten o'clock, A. M. in half an hour paſt a bluff on the eaſt ſide, and in half an hour more found a very tall cypreſs laying acroſs the river, by which we were detained an hour; but cutting the top away we paſſed on; about three quarters of an hour after had ſome pine land * on the weſt bank; in general the land on both ſides is low. About two o'clock P. M. paſt a ſmall iſland; about half an hour after two the bank on the weſt ſide was about ſeventy feet high; ‖ continued between pretty high banks till half an hour after three, when we encamped on a high ſand bar, on the weſt ſide of the river, current unequal, and the obſtructions of no note, ſince we cut the tree; travelled this day nine miles.

15th. Departed half an hour paſt ten o'clock A. M. paſt ſeveral iſlands, and found the bank, on the weſt ſide, in many places high, we ſaw in many others high and intervale oak land;—not ſo much drowned land as the former days;—paſſed through ſeveral rapids, and at half an hour paſt three, P. M. came to camp at the end of a

* When the pine is mentioned hereabouts, I mean the *Pinus Abies Virginiana, conis parvis ſubrotundis*, or the balm of *Gilead* pine.

‖ N. B. The river was high.

large high pine bluff, on the eaſt ſide, having travelled this day fifteen miles.

16th. At half an hour paſt nine o'clock, A. M. proceeded and came paſt a variety of high and low land; ſhot ſome ducks and teals; but unfortunately this forenoon loſt our gun, being torn out of my hands by a ſnag of a tree, and as it ſunk in deep water, it was irrecoverable, the river being rapid. About two o'clock P. M. paſt a ſhort hill, on the weſt ſhore, upwards of eighty feet high above the preſent level of the water;—paſſed a few creeks and lagoons, three iſlands and ſeveral rapids; we came down fourteen miles and three quarters, and at half an hour paſt three, encamped on the eaſt ſide in an hollow.

17th. Proceeded a quarter before nine A. M. and in leſs than half an hour ſaw a hill, a little inland, on the weſt ſide; and an hour after this we had the mouth of a river on the eaſt, this is called, at its fording place, in the trading path, the laſt branch of *Tombechbé*; none of the banks we paſt this morning were very low, and on the weſt ſide, oppoſite this mouth of a river, the banks fifty or ſixty feet higher than the preſent ſurface of the water. The weather being ſeverely cold i was obliged to go on ſhore and make a fire, on this highland, half a mile below the above river, near the mouth of a ſtony creek, which we took to be the *Sonac Tocalè*, which we had croſſed in the road going up; here we remained till noon. We paſſed three iſlands this day, and the general run of the land is middling high on both ſides. The weather was very ſevere, which obliged us to encamp at one o'clock,

in

in the mouth of a creek, called Old Town Creek, at the foot of an hill, rising about seventy feet out of the water, having come about seven miles: it rained very hard all the afternoon, and the next two days, by which means we kept in camp till the

20th, at noon. Half a mile from our camp the high land ends, and we travelled but one hour and twenty minutes, when the severity of the weather obliged us again to encamp, having come six miles, and in that distance found chiefly low land: past four islands, and as many rapids, one of them a bad pass: our camp was on a piece of fine rich, middling high land, which Mr. *Dow* reported to be very extensive. We lay here on account of bad weather; such as cold, rain and snow, till the

26th, when at a little past twelve we departed. During our stay here the water gained near four feet in height: in one hour and an half, having gone near five miles, and past six or seven islands and rapids, we were at the mouth of the river *Oca Tibekaw*, the lower road between the *Choctaws* and *Chicasaws*;—crossed this river about two miles above this place;—about one mile below this, having past an island, we saw a very remarkable bluff on the west side, rising above fifty feet out of the present level of the water; this is near a mile and a half long; the bluff is covered principally with *Juniper*, or cedar shrubs, and in it are two or three gullies, in which as many springs come trickling down for about two thirds of its length: a bank projects out at its foot, having a flat and very even surface, without any plants, (a little grass excepted)

growing

growing thereon. This ſurface projects about nine or ten feet from the bluff into the river, and was about eight feet above the level of the water, it looks as if made by art, and if placed near any town of note, i do not doubt would be much uſed as a walk. The bluff ends in two little hills, and a ſmall iſland is at the lower end of it; all which, added to its being in the form of a creſcent, makes it have a very romantic appearance. From hence we went paſt one more bluff, a conſiderable iſland, and a rapid; in which laſt we had low pine land on the eaſt bank, and got into the mouth of a creek, called eleven mile creek, which we went up half a mile, and at three P. M. we were forced by the rain to come to camp, having travelled this day, ten miles and a half.

27th. The rain obliged us to lay by all day.

28th. At 11 o'clock we embarked, and had more rapids to go thro' than on any of the former days; likewiſe ſaw more high land than before. I think it remarkable, that we ſee ſo very few outwaterings of creeks, or rivers, into the great river. An hour and an half after leaving camp, we ſaw a bark log, juſt landed on the weſt ſide, and evident marks of people having juſt landed; this was in a long reach, and we had ſeen a ſmoak, but when we came near the bark log, the ſmoak vaniſhed all at once. We ſoon found theſe people to be a war party of Creeks, who perceiving our boat, had put out their fire, which on theſe occaſions they make of hickory bark and other oily matters, that yield little ſmoak. We therefore put on our hats, which we had not on before, it being a fine agreeable day, and rather warm, and laying on the paddles, did all we could

could to ſhew that we were white people. It was fortunate for me that i had not brought a ſavage guide with me, which would have expoſed us to a volley from thoſe warriors; we did not ſee them, but we knew by the ſuppreſſion of the ſmoak, that they had diſcovered us; they were undoubtedly on the top of a pretty high bank, in ambuſh, ſo we let the boat flow paſt them. N. B. We have diſcovered many of thoſe bark logs, made of cones, both above and below this place, upon which the war party ferry over. Half a mile lower down we ſaw the mouth of a middling large creek, on the eaſt ſide. We paſt four iſlands this day, in two hours and an half's time. We ſaw one of the high ſavannahs, which bounds here on the river, with a delightful graſſy bluff: the river is here above two hundred feet wide. Having come twenty three miles, we encamped at four o'clock, on a gravel bar. We ſaw many places that appeared like old fields, as having been formerly cultivated.

29th. At nine o'clock proceeded; the firſt half hour we paſſed chiefly through drowned lands, and then came to a large lagoon, going to N. W. in which were innumerable geeſe and ducks; but the weſt bank of the lagoon is a handſome bluff. In half an hour more we came to a creek's mouth on the weſt: we ſaw again ſome ſpots bearing marks of former cultivation, and more of drowned land; the river in general this day rapid, with many iſlands: at half an hour paſt three, P. M. having travelled thirty-five miles, we encamped on the eaſt ſide, in a lagoon, on a high bank, where, for the firſt time, we ſaw the rich ground clear of large canes;

this

this being timbered, chiefly with the ſhag bark hickory, iron wood and Spaniſh oak.

30th. This morning we had our boat loaden, but it began to rain, and thus were obliged to unload again. Here we found a canoe which was well made, but had been by the ſavages, on account of the war, ſcuttled, and rendered unfit for uſe, however we found, that if we could make her any ways tight, ſhe would be more ſafe than the one we had, and this we effected by the help of wedges, clay and leather. Our proviſions beginning to grow ſcant, and having loſt the only gun i had taken with me, i began to be uneaſy, eſpecially as we found the beavers become leſs plenty. The weather was uncommonly bad till the evening of the third of January, 1772, when it cleared up, and next morning

4th January, 1772, at a quarter before 11 o' clock, A. M. we proceeded in our new craft; and by half an hour paſt one, P. M. we had paſt high banks, and two iſlands: at this hour we had one of the ſavannahs on the weſt ſide, the bank being here about four feet out of the water: at a quarter before four we were at a conſiderable iſland, having gone ſince the laſt ſavannah between low banks; a quarter before five o'clock came to camp under a low bluff, on the eaſt ſide. The canoe proves very leaky, and on unloading we find a great deal of our bread ſpoiled. This day came twenty-two miles and an half, the canes and timber are here exceeding large.

5th. At a quarter paſt ten embarked: high banks on both ſides. At half an hour after eleven, paſt the mouth of a river from the eaſt; this is called by the ſavages *Naſhchaw*. The land

land here is exceeding rich, the canes very large, and we saw a species of *phaseolus*, in great abundance, along the banks. About a mile and a quarter below the creek, we met four savages from *Abeka*, in the *Chactaw* nation, to whom Mr. *Dow* was known. The river has risen considerably since yesterday; the current has been for these two days almost uniformly at the rate of three miles per hour. It is remarkable, that though the velocity of our way was not much above two miles per hour, independent of the current, yet we had several instances of having evidently out-run the flood at night, in so much that it would scarce reach us again before morning. We came to camp near the savages abovementioned, having come seven miles and an half; they had a good canoe which i intended to purchase. The weather was very cold to day. Lost a silver spoon at our last camp, which Mr. *Dow* proposed to go and fetch; but he found it impracticable to cross the *Nasbehaw* river. I agreed with the savages that they should hunt for us to procure provisions. At night it rained; our camp was on the east side, in a very rich spot. We have not yet seen any sand or gravel, except on the bars and islands in the river, the soil in general being clay, or loam, with a dry black mould.

6th. After a great deal of persuasion, i bought the canoe from the savages; and they brought me in two deer, and a turkey; for all which i gave them five yards of blue strouds, two powder-horns, a knife, and some small shot. I described our last camp to them, and desired them to look for the abovementioned spoon, directing

them to leave it in their own country, with Mr. *Dow*'s partner, who lived juſt by their homes, and gave them a note to him, deſiring him to pay them for their trouble; but when they underſtood it to be the *white ſtone* (i. e.) ſilver, they declined going purpoſely for it; but promiſed, if chance led them to the place to carry it as directed, for they, not being able to work it, in caſe the trader refuſed to pay them, they would loſe their labour; but had it been *the fat of the earth* (i. e.) lead or pewter, in that caſe they might make bullets, or ear-rings of it, and then they would not take pains in vain: towards evening they left us, and during night we barbecued our veniſon, to preſerve it.

7th. At half an hour paſt ſeven o'clock A. M. embarked in our new craft; all day we paſt between high banks, ſome ſteep, ſome ſloping; ſeveral as high as eighty feet above the ſurface of the water; one of theſe has an extenſive ſavannah on the top. At the end of nineteen miles and an half, on the weſt ſide, we ſaw the mouth of the river *Noxſhubby*, or *Hatcha ooſe*, its banks are high on both ſides: here ſeems to be the true theatre of the war, for the bark logs are very numerous. The river is widened now from two hundred to two hundred and fifty feet. A mile and a half below the mouth of *Noxſhubby* is the firſt bluff of arid ochre, like earth, very high and ſteep; and about eight miles lower a white one, being a kind of ſtone almoſt as ſoft as chalk. Towards evening we met with ſeveral ſand bars, and little iſles. At four o'clock P. M. we came to camp on a low ſpot, on the eaſt-ſide, having gone done the river forty-two miles

and

and a half; all day dull weather, and at night rain.

8th. Proceeded half an hour after 8 A. M. and having gone a little more than a mile, we reached the mouth of the creek called *Eſtombogue bé* (i. e.) Crooked Creek, on the weſt ſide; from this creek's name the French derive their *Tombechbé*, the name of the fort which ſtood here, and which has again given that name to the whole river. We went about half a mile further down, under a high and ſteep bank of chalky ſtone, and arrived at the ruins of the fort, by means of which the French kept all the ſavages in awe. I went aſhore in the old fields, and drew a view of the ruins; this is about forty miles eaſt from the town of *Abeeka*. The river is not ſixty feet wide here. About a mile and a half below theſe ruins is a pretty high, but ſloping ſlaty bluff: having come about nine miles, we arrived at a hunting camp of *Chactaws*, on the weſt ſide; who invited us on ſhore, treated us very kindly, and ſpared us ſome veniſon, bear's meat and oil. The afternoon being ſtormy, with hail and rain, we encamped at a ſmall diſtance from them: the canes were not very plenty here, but the land rich: a great deal of the plant called *Indian Hemp* grows in this place; but the ſeaſon deprived me of the ſatisfaction of knowing what genus it is of.

9th. At half an hour paſt eleven proceeded, and in an hour and a quarter we paſſed by *Chickianoeé*, a white bluff, with a ſavannah on its top, on the weſt ſide; it is upwards of ſeventy feet high above the water's level: we paſt ſeveral high bluffs, among which one is yellow like *Ochre*. We ſaw many bars alſo, and lagoons: having

having travelled twenty-four miles, came to camp at four o'clock P. M. on the eaſt ſide, at the beginning of a ſteep ſlaty bluff.

10th. At half an hour paſt nine, A. M. proceeded; we went between high bluffs, and in two hours time came to the mouth of *Tuſcalooſa* river from the eaſt; and a little below it is the ſteep white chalky bluff, on whoſe top is a vaſt plain, and ſome remains of huts in it; the bluff is called the *Chicaſow Gallery*, becauſe from here the ſavages uſed to annoy the French boats going up to the fort, or down from it. The river is hereabouts full of rapids, and bad paſſes: we came paſt a number of high bluffs, moſt of them chalky. At half an hour paſt three we paſt the mouth of *Sookhanatcha* from the weſt, and three miles below it came to camp, at four o'clock P. M. at the foot of the hill, where formerly the *Cooſadas* were ſettled: this place is called *Sukta-looſa* (i.e.) Black Bluff, from its being a kind of coal; it is a great thorough-fare for warring ſavages, therefore we took the uſual precaution of large fires, and hanging our hats on ſtakes, which we had reaſon to think not in vain; for in the night we heard the report of ſmall arms. This day we came thirty-ſix miles. It is worthy of remark, that although we have come near ſeventy miles from the ruins of *Tombechbé*, yet by land the diſtance is not above twenty-four, or twenty-five miles. The land here is very fine, and Mr. *Dow* told me, that he had lived here with the *Cooſadas*, and that the common yield of corn was from ſixty to eighty buſhels per acre; that they increaſed horſes and hogs to any degree

they

they pleaſed, and that veniſon, turkies, and fiſh were uncommonly plenty.

11th. Laſt night and this morning, being rainy, we could not proceed till eleven o'clock. All this day we paſſed through the remains of the *Cooſada* and *Occhoy* ſettlements, being all a fine tract of ground, of which much had been cleared; but it is now again overgrown with reeds; the grand, or publick plantation in particular is an excellent tract. At four o'clock P. M. we encamped on a little plain, under a bluff, where was a large hunting camp, to appearance about two years old: here we ſaw ſome ſtones, having been deeply marked by the ſavages, with ſome uncouth marks, but moſt of them being ſtraight lines and croſſed, i have ſince been led to conjecture, whether they were not occaſioned by theſe people grinding their awls on theſe ſtones; yet they do not ill reſemble inſcriptions: this place is a pretty ſituation, and is near two miles below the deſerted *Occhoy* town, which ſtood likewiſe near a black coaly bluff; the diſtance we made this day is twenty one miles, we had fine weather during the day; but the night was ſhowery.

12th. At half an hour paſt eight A. M. proceeded. All this day we ſaw marks of great fertility of ſoil, and much tolerably high land: at half an hour paſt ten, we were at a creek called *Abeſhaï*, at a quarter paſt eleven at the laſt *Occhoy* field, by a creek called *Baſhailawaw*; at eleven A. M. at the hills of *Nanna Falaya*, on the eaſt ſide; which riſe ſteep out of the water, about fifteen, or twenty feet, then ſlope up into very high ſhort pine hills. Some parts of the rock

are

are red, others grey. Here we were overtaken by very bad weather, from which took ſhelter; at half an hour paſt one, P. M. we encamped about three quarters of a mile below the hill, on the ſlope of a pretty high bank, where we found the remains of a camp, that had been occupied lately by white people; we came about eleven miles and an half this day; the rain continued till two o'clock A. M. next day, when the wind ſhifting to W. N. W, it grew exceſſively cold.

13th. At half an hour paſt ten A. M. proceeded; at one o'clock we came to a hill on the eaſt ſide, with an old field on its ſummit; this hill is called *Batcha-Chooka*; here we found a notorious gang of thieves, belonging to the town of *Oka Looſa*, a town in the Chactaw nation; when we ſaw their raft, we took them to be a Creek war party, therefore, being hailed by them, and not chooſing to be ſhot at, we went near the ſhore; but on diſcovering who they were i refuſed to land; they ſtill inſiſted we muſt, but my obſtinate perſiſting to the contrary, diſappointed their ſanguine hopes of plunder; and after ſome altercation i proceeded. This day the marks of fertility of ſoil are not ſo uninterrupted as on the former days. Our weather was clear, and a ſtrong northerly wind prevailed;—we came nineteen miles ſince morning, and encamped on the weſt ſide, in a low ſpot of ground.

14th. Laſt night the froſt was ſevere; at a quarter paſt nine, A. M. proceeded;—in half an hour's time we ſaw very high hills, at a mile, or better, from the river, ſeemingly covered with pine timber; theſe hills the ſavages call *Nanna Chahaws*. Here is a ſteep place above forty feet per-

perpendicular out of the water, and another ſteep above it; the laſt is a grey ſlaty rock; this place is called *Teeakhaily Ekutapa*, and the people from *Chicaſahay* had a ſettlement here before the war. About a mile and a quarter from hence is a remarkable white ſand hill on the eaſt ſide; four miles lower we came to *Yagna-hoolah* (i. e.) the Beloved Ground, which lies on the eaſt ſide, and is very high, continuing above two miles along the river bank; its lower part is ſteep and of a whitiſh grey, and at the end above two hundred feet high, reckoning perpendicularly. A mile below this is a white ſand hill on the weſt ſide; we ſaw the pine hills all this day, at various diſtances from the river, ſometimes cloſe to it, and the canes begin to diminiſh, and pine trees mix among the timber. The current for theſe two laſt days, is very conſiderably ſlackened, and the river widened to above five hundred feet. We came about thirty miles and an half this day, and encamped at four o'clock P. M. on the ſide of a kind of bluff, about ſix miles below a branch called *Iſawaya*: all day cold, the latter part and night dull and hazy, at a quarter paſt nine proceeded. Eight miles below our camp we were at the mouth of *Senti-Bogue* (i. e.) Snake Creek, having an iſland in its mouth, and coming from the weſtward. Two miles and a quarter lower is *Atchatickpé*, a large bay, or lagoon, on the ſame ſide: at this place is the beginning of our boundary with the Chactaws, running from the weſt till it ſtrikes *Senti-Bogue*, and then follows the courſe of ſaid creek, up to a certain ſugar-loaf hill, and ſo over to *Bogue Hooma*, and *Bakkatanè*. A mile below this, at the bending of the

the river is a bluff, but not very high, of a dark grey ſtone; above this it riſes gradually ſloping into a very high hill, variegated into ſmall ridges. We ſaw many ſpots of pines, and ſome white ſand hills; but in general the ſoil has a better appearance than yeſterday. About an hour before we encamped, we came to the laſt rapids, or the firſt from below; here is a remarkable ſpot of yellow rocks in the weſtern bank, beginning with a high, perpendicular, white rock, with ſome graſs ſpots; it is above fifty feet above the preſent ſurface of the water; its top is level and ſhrubby; in the middle projects a remarkable lump, which, in coming down looks exactly like a buttreſs againſt a wall. At four o'clock P. M. we encamped on the eaſt ſide in the low ground, above a mile below the rocks, having come thirty-one miles. The weather has been clear and cold all this day. Stout ſloops and ſchooners may come up to this rapid; therefore i judge that here ſome conſiderable ſettlement will take place.

16th. Proceeded at half an hour paſt eight, A. M. Having come about fifteen miles, we ſaw the remains of the old *Weetumpkee* ſettlement: about ſeven miles below this, on the eaſt ſide is an odd rocky bluff, appearing to be ſandy, and is covered with cedar trees. The river here is very crooked, and about ſix miles below on the weſt ſide, we ſaw a ſpacious old field, and a ſmoak in one edge of it; but nobody near it, and two miles lower down, hearing a ruſtling in the canes, we looked that way, and ſaw a ſavage in a war dreſs, lying flat; finding himſelf perceived, he got up and beckoned to us; but although

though we were within ten feet of him, we ſeemed not to have remarked him, upon which he lay down again: it is to be imagined that he was not alone, and that this was a war party, who had been at the ſmoak, in the old field, and having perceived us, had come to this place, knowing that here we muſt come near the bank; but ſeeing that we were no *Chactaws*, and thinking themſelves undiſcovered, they kept cloſe. At a quarter paſt four o'clock, P. M. we came to a camp on the weſt-ſide, which we ſuppoſed by the boats, &c. to be occupied by white people; in which opinion we were ſoon confirmed. When they invited us on ſhore, we found they were one *Thomas Baſkett*, with two white hunters, and ſome *Chactaws*; we were here well regaled with excellent meat, and very good bread, which being prepared in an excellent manner, was a noble feaſt to us. I purchaſed ſome bear, bacon and veniſon hams of them, and ſtaid all night at their camp; the diſtance we came this day was thirty-one miles.

17th. Embarked at half an hour paſt nine, A. M. and proceeded, accompanied by two canoes with ſavages: we ſoon paſt by ſome high pine hills on the eaſt-ſide; and at their end, having come about two miles, we were at the little creek called *Apé Bogue cosè*, which is a ſpring ſo intenſely ſalt, that the ſavages told us, three kettles of its water, yields one of ſalt. Having then proceeded for four hours through low land on each ſide, we arrived at the place called by the French, *The Forks* being a lagoon divided into three branches, whereof the firſt is called *Apè Tonſa*, the ſecond *Beelofa*, and the third *Cantacalamoo*;

äntacalamco: here the ſavages left us; we ſtill proceeded for half an hour more through low land, and then came to a large bay, at the end whereof begins the *Tomeehettee* bluff, where formerly a tribe of that nation reſided; this is the firſt time we have the real pine barren butting on the river, it is very level. About five miles below this place, we came to the firſt iſlands that are of note; the land continues low and pretty rich: here we ſee the firſt ſummer canes At ſix o'clock P. M. we came to the *Cooſadas* bluff, having had the *Naniabè* (i. e.) Fiſh Killer's iſland above an hour on our weſt ſide; this place was the laſt ſettlement of the *Cooſadas*, after they left *Sukta looſa*; and in little more than half an hour we were at the mouth of the great *Alibamo* river. We paſt the *Nita Abè*, or Bear Killer's Bluff on the left, and at nine o'clock P. M. we came to the north end of the iſland, which divides the branch called *Dog River*, from the weſt branch of the river. Here we ſtaid all night at the plantation of the *Chevalier de Lucere*, but found only three or four old ſlaves and children, the whole of the able hands, and the overſeer, being gone to make tar-kilns, ſo that we had but indifferent fare. We came this day forty-two miles and an half. N. B. Thoſe iſlands are very fertile, and have a great many plantations on them, on the branches which lay out of our way, particularly on the *Taënſa*, and *Dog Rivers*.

18th. At a quarter paſt nine, A. M. proceeded, paſt ſeveral plantations, as well on the iſlands, as on the main, particularly *Campbell's*, *Stuart's*, *Ardry's*, and *Mc Gillivray's*: at half an hour paſt eleven, A. M. arrived at Mr. *Favre*'s houſe, where

where i ſtaid in order to get ſome refreſhment; this being the firſt Chriſtian habitation i had been at ſince the 20th September, laſt year. Mr. *Favre* treated us in a moſt friendly, genteel and hoſpitable manner. At one o'clock ſome boats went up the river, which i heard were Mr. *Stuart*'s people, with a provincial deputy ſurveyor, going up to aſcertain the boundary between us and the *Chactaws*. At two o'clock, ſome gentlemen, among whom was Major *Dixon*, of the ſixteenth regiment, and *Charles Stuart*, deputy ſuperintendant of Indian affairs (to whom i deſcribed *Atchatikpè* and *Senti-Bogue*, where they were to begin) followed them: they proceeded up to Mr. *Stuart*'s plantation, about three miles higher up the river. We had come ſeven miles and a quarter this day. In the afternoon it began to rain, and all night was a prodigious ſtorm of wind and rain, which i had the pleaſure of weathering out under a good roof: here we found ſeveral families of *Chactaw* ſavages.

19th. At a quarter paſt nine, A. M. we proceeded, went paſt *Chaſtang*'s, *Strother*'s, and *Narbonne*'s plantations, having chiefly pine land on the main, and the rich iſlands on our left all this day. Having gone five miles and three quarters, we paſſed by the ruins of *Fort Condè*, or old *Mobile*, and near ſix miles lower down we paſt by the ruins of a fine plantation, formerly belonging to the French Intendant at Mobile, now to Mr. *Lizars* at the ſame place: 4 miles and 3 quarters lower down we met with the firſt marſh, the river being very full, we could not learn how far the ſalt water had its effect, the bay itſelf being freſh and good at this time; but Mr. *Dow*,

who had been ſeveral times up and down this river, and had lived with the *Cooſadas* for ſome years, aſſured me, that the tide was very viſible at the old *Wetumpkee* ſettlements, and in extraordinary tides even as far as *Seekta Looſa*, where, during his reſidence on the ſpot, he has frequently ſeen it ebb and flow about an inch. We came this day thirty-five miles and a half, and at nine o'clock P. M. we arrived at *Mobile*.

N. B. It is to be obſerved that the general courſe of this river is from north to ſouth; but it is very crooked.

Journals are tedious, and i believe the above account will ſufficiently give an idea of the country, elſe i might record more of this kind, eſpecially a journey from *Penſacola* to *Manchac*, and down the Miſſiſſipi, from thence to the ſea; but i will content myſelf with publiſhing a copy of a paper which was given me by Captain *Rufus Putnam*, with liberty to make what uſe i pleaſed of it. This gentleman was one of the committee appointed by the people of Connecticut, to explore the country about the *Natchez*. He ſent a letter of the ſame contents to my very worthy friend Doctor *J. Lorimer*, at *Penſacola*; this paper will compleat the intention of my giving an idea of the country, and with it i will conclude this my firſt volume.

It is as follows:

"SIR!

"According to my promiſe, when i left *Penſacola*, i now ſend you the obſer-
" vations which i made of the *Miſſiſſipi* coun-
" try, more eſpecially that part we were ſent to
" explore

" explore, and i chooſe rather to do it from ex-
" tracts of the minutes i made in the woods, than
" by any general obſervation on them, and i am
" ſure that your goodneſs will excuſe every fault
" in my vulgar way of writing, ſince, if you have
" but the facts, you will be able to form a ge-
" neral account in ſuch language as you pleaſe,
" and i ſhall begin my account firſt at the Nat-
" chez.

" 26th April, 1773, arrived at fort *Roſalie*,
" which is built on a high eminence, that over-
" looks the whole country, about two hundred
" yards from the river; it was built of a hepta-
" gon figure, with one ſide fronting the river;
" each ſide, or angle, was about thirty yards
" clear, with two gates in the eaſtern angles. I
" took here the meridional altitude of the ſun,
" by Davis's quadrant, as i did again on my
" return, and i make the latitude of this place to
" be 31° 15′ north; from hence i alſo ſaw the
" range of high lands from *Loftus*'s cliffs, and
" thoſe on the eaſt ſide of the *Yeooma-Chitto*,
" which is near twenty miles diſtant, the lands
" hereabouts are very uneven, no creeks, and
" much worn out.

" 27th Viſited *St. Catharine*'s creek; found
" the lands very good, timber walnut, hickory,
" oak, aſh, &c. Mr. *Thompſon*'s well was per-
" fect good water, without ſtone or curve.

" 30th. On the point above *Boyd*'s creek tra-
" velled two or three miles into the country,
" found it moſtly cane land, but ſubject to
" overflowing.

" 1ſt May. Arrived at Petit Goufre, where is
" a firm rock on the eaſt ſide for near a mile,

" partaking

" partaking (in my opinion) of the nature of " lime ſtone, the land near the river is much " broken and very high, perhaps three hundred " if not five hundred feet high; about four " miles farther up the river is a point of land " ſomewhat low, but good, and ſtocked amaz- " ing thick with mulberry.

" 3d. About four miles up the bay one *Pierre* " landed and ſpent ſome time in exploring the " country, found the land to the N. N. W. " and N. E. low, ſoutherly the lands make " higher; but broken into hills and vales, but " then the low lands are not often overflowed,— " white oak, live oak abound here, intermixed " with copalm, and other timber, common on " the Miſſiſſipi:—going up this to the fork, " which is called ſeven leagues, we ſaw ſeveral " ſtone quarries, in the bank ſome gravel bot- " tom and ſand banks, went unto a hill to view, " found it broken as far as we could ſee, clay " ſoil, and ſome gravel ſtones on the top of the " ground.

" 4th. Arrived at the forks, where the river " parts almoſt at right angles, and which is the " biggeſt branch I cannot tell: travelled N. E " about 3 miles and a half up, until we fell on a " ſmall creek that falls into the ſouth fork of the " *Baſoune Pierre*, down which we came to our " boat; this branch we found winding as the " main creek; the lands we ſaw are clay and " marl ſoil, not ſo uneven as we had before " ſeen on the creek; arrived at the big black, " (*Petite riviere des Teaux*) where part of our " company ſet off by land to the *Yaſoo*, and the " reſt of us by water, found many parts of the

" bank

" bank high enough to build on before we came
" to the *Yaſoo* cliffs, which are very high. Nine
" miles up the river *Yaſoo* found Captain *Enos*,
" and thoſe that went with him, at a place where
" it is ſaid the *French* formerly had a fort and
" ſettlement; the bank on the right hand, going
" up at this place, is a high ridge of rocks, with
" a fine ſpring of water, falling from the *quarne*,
" the *Yaſoo* river is about four hundred, or five
" hundred feet broad, its courſe is eaſt, about
" two miles and an half up N. E. to the above
" place, is a very dead, ſtagnated water, of bad
" colour, covered with ſcum, and abounds with
" aligators; its banks in ſome places are high,
" but cut through in many places, by the over-
" flowing of the *Miſſiſſipi*; about two miles and
" a half from the mouth is a pleaſant creek,
" comes in on the right, to which we returned
" and encamped, from whence we made ſeveral
" tours into the country, found all this point
" between the *Yaſoo* cliffs and the river, low and
" full of ponds.

" 13th. Colonel *Putnam*, Mr. *Lyman* and my-
" ſelf ſet out about ten o'clock A. M. for the
" purpoſe of farther reconnoitring the lands be-
" tween the old fields, on the *Yaſoo* cliffs, we
" went up the *Yaſoo*, near the old field, or
" French ſettlement, ſteering ſouth; in about
" two miles, came to a dead creek, which we
" traced eaſtward, till we found it came out of
" the high lands; we then bore ſouthward two
" or three miles, travelling by ſome cypreſs
" ſwamps, ſome lands not overflowed by the
" Miſſiſſipi, keeping the highlands in ſight on
" our left; this brought us into an excellent flat

" piece

" piece of land, full of grafs, and fome cane, with
" oak, walnut, and other wood, common in the
" country, we difcovered figns of water fpread-
" ing over this land from the hills in feveral
" places, we fteered eaft as we found the high-
" lands bore farther off, but was foon taken up
" with a mighty cane break; Colonel *Putnam*
" here climbed a tree, difcovered highland at
" about a hundred rod diftance, we travelled for
" it and arrived at it, in about two hours, with
" the utmoft difficulty, in our way found a fine
" running fpring of water; afcending the higheft
" part of the hill i climbed a tree, from which i
" had a fine profpect, found the lands N. E. and
" S. to be hilly, but not mountainous, nor much
" broken, then returned to the fpring aforemen-
" tioned and encamped.

" 14th. Arrived at the *Yafoo* cliffs, on the
" *Miffiffipi*, where we met the reft of our com-
" pany, we came down under the high lands all
" the way, found the country good.

" 15th. Mr. *Lyman*, and myfelf, went unto
" the cliffs, which fhut quite down the river,
" on thefe hills i climbed two trees, and found
" the land make high north eaftward, and S. S.
" eaftward, bearing off from the river, but fome-
" what uneven, full of cane and rich foil, even
" on the very higheft ridges, juft below the cliffs,
" the bank is low, by which means the water on
" the *Miffiffipi* flows back and runs between the
" bank and high land (which range near north
" and S. S. E. to the *Looſa-chitta*, forming much
" low land, cypreſs fwamp, and dead ponds,
" without one brook, or running ftream, as Capt.

" *Enos*

" *Enos* informed me, who went up that way by " land.

" 17th. Went up the big Black (*Looſa Chitto*) " which is at the mouth about eighty feet wide, " but within, from eighty to a hundred and forty; " in about a mile and a half came to high land " on the right, but broken, a mile and a half " further, the high lands make again on the " right; ſpent much time in reconnoitring the " country, ſaw ſeveral ſprings of water on the " right, but none on the left; at eight miles paſt " Mr. *Cluere*, an Indian trader; here the high " lands come near the river on the left, and ap- " pear to be the ſame range that comes from " the *Yaſoo cliffs*.

" 18th. Being fourteen miles up, lands make " high near the river for two or three miles, but " broken, though good and full of ſprings of " water: in the afternoon made high level land " on the left, (which is now reſerved for the ca- " pital:) after reconnoitring the country round " (which we found very good for a ſettlement, or " building a town) we encamped.

" 19th. Set out in the morning, up the river, " reconnoitring both ſides for four or five miles " from the river, found the land good, not ſo " much drowned, nor ſo uneven; after row- " ing the boat about ſix miles and a half fur- " ther, we came to a rapid water, ſtone or gra- " vel bottom, twenty or thirty rods; and in " one place a firm rock, almoſt acroſs the river, " and much of it bare at this ſeaſon (which is " neither low nor high water) as confines the wa- " ter to nearly twenty feet, and the channel " about four feet deep.——I ſhall add no more " by way of extract, and ſhall obſerve only, that i

" have ſaid little about the *Miſſiſſipi*, as it is ſo ge-
" nerally known that i could afford you but little
" light in the matter; but have confined my ex-
" tracts to the more unknown parts; one thing
" i would obſerve about the poſtage of the croſs,
" above *point coupé*, which is, that i do not be-
" lieve any ſuch thing, as a communication acroſs
" here, in high water. I ſpent two days up that
" creek, found it grow leſs and leſs, by branch-
" ing out into ſmall rivulets, coming from high
" lands, and not the leaſt appearance of lakes, or
" drowned lands."

It may, perhaps, be agreeable to the inhabitants of Eaſt and Weſt-Florida, who become purchaſers of this work, to have a copy of ſuch articles of the late treaty of peace, in 1762, as immediately concern them. I have therefore ſubjoined, by way of appendix, to this volume, the ſubſequent extract from the preliminary articles of peace between his *Britannick* Majeſty, the *Moſt Chriſtian* King, and the *Catholick* King; ſigned at *Fontainbleau*, the 3d day of Nov. 1762.

ARTICLE II. HIS *Moſt Chriſtian* Majeſty renounces all pretenſions, which he has heretofore formed, or might have formed to *Nova Scotia*, or *Acadia*, in all its parts, and guaranties the whole of it, with all its dependencies, to the King of *Great-Britain*: moreover, his *Moſt Chriſtian* Majeſty cedes and guaranties to his ſaid *Britannick* Majeſty, in full right, *Canada*, with all its dependencies, as well as the iſland of *Cape Breton*, and all the other iſlands in the gulph and river of *St. Laurence*, without reſtriction, and without any liberty to depart from this ceſſion and guaranty, under any pretence, or to trouble *Great-Britain* in the poſſeſſions abovementioned.

mentioned. His *Britannick* Majeſty, on his ſide, agrees to grant to the inhabitants of *Canada*, the liberty of the *Catholick* religion, he will in conſequence give the moſt exact, and the moſt effectual orders, that his new *Roman Catholick* ſubjects may profeſs the worſhip of their religion, according to the rites of the *Roman* church, as far as the laws of *Great-Britain* permit. His *Britannick* Majeſty further agrees, that the *French* inhabitants, or others, who would have been ſubjects of the *Moſt Chriſtian* King in *Canada*, may retire in all ſafety and freedom, where ever they pleaſe, and may ſell their eſtates, provided it be to his *Britannick* Majeſty's ſubjects, and tranſport their effects, as well as their perſons, without being reſtrained in their emigration, under any pretence whatſoever, except debts or criminal proſecutions; the term limited for this emigration being fixed to the ſpace of eighteen months, to be computed from the day of the ratification of the definitive treaty.

ART. VI. In order to re-eſtabliſh peace on the moſt ſolid and laſting foundations, and to remove forever every ſubject of diſpute, with regard to the limits of the *Britiſh* and *French* territories on the continent of *America*; it is agreed, that for the future the confines between the dominions of his *Britannick* Majeſty, and thoſe of his *Moſt Chriſtian* Majeſty, in that part of the world, ſhall be irrevocably fixed, by a line drawn along the middle of the river *Miſſiſſipi* from the ſource, as far as the river *Iberville*, and from thence by a line drawn along the middle of this river, and of the lakes *Maurepas* and *Pontchartrain* to the ſea, and to this purpoſe the *Moſt Chriſtian* King cedes in full right, and guaranties to his *Britannick*

tannick Majeſty, the river and port of *Mobile*, and every thing that he poſſeſſes, or ought to have poſſeſſed, on the left ſide of the river *Miſſiſſipi*, except the town of *New Orleans*, and the iſland in which it is ſituated, which ſhall remain to *France*; provided, that the navigation of the river *Miſſiſſipi* ſhall be equally free, as well to the ſubjects of *Great-Britain* as to thoſe of *France*, in its whole length and breadth, from its ſource to the ſea, and that part expreſsly, which is between the ſaid iſland of *New-Orleans*, and the right bank of that river, as well as the paſſage both in and out of its mouth: it is further ſtipulated, that the veſſels belonging to the ſubjects of either nation, ſhall not be ſtopped, viſited, or ſubject to the payment of any duty whatſoever. The ſtipulations in favour of the inhabitants of *Canada*, inſerted in the ſecond article, ſhall alſo take place, with regard to the inhabitants of the country, ceded by this article.

ART. XIX. His *Catholick* Majeſty cedes and guaranties in full right to his *Britannick* Majeſty, all that *Spain* poſſeſſes on the continent of *North-America*, to the eaſt, or to the ſouth-eaſt of the river Miſſiſſipi, and his *Britannic* Majeſty agrees to grant to the inhabitants of this country above ceded, the liberty of the *Catholic* religion: He will in conſequence give the moſt exact, and the moſt effectual orders, that his new *Roman Catholick* ſubjects may profeſs the worſhip of their religion, according to the rites of the *Roman* church, as far as the laws of *Great-Britain* permit. His *Britannick* Majeſty further agrees, that the *Spaniſh* inhabitants, or others, who would have been ſubjects to the *Catholick* King, in the ſaid countries, may retire in all ſafety and freedom, &c.

F I N I S.

G713